D. 20

SALLE GAGNON

BIBLIO-
THEQUE
DE LA VILLE DE
MONTRÉAL

MONTREAL
CITY
LIBRARY

920.18
B622Li
D.

518561

THE

Life and Adventures

OF

MATTHEW BISHOP

OF

DEDDINGTON in *Oxfordshire.*

Containing an ACCOUNT of several Actions by Sea, Battles and Sieges by Land, in which he was present from 1701 to 1711, interspersed with many curious Incidents, entertaining Conversations and judicious Reflections.

Written by HIMSELF.

LONDON:

Printed for J. BRINDLEY in *New Bond-Street*; G. HAWKINS in *Fleet-Street*; R. DODSLEY in *Pall-Mall*; and J. MILLAN opposite to the *Admiralty-Office*. 1744.

G

TO THE

RIGHT HONORABLE

THE

Earl of STAIR,

Field Marſhal and Commander in Chief
of his Majeſty's Forces in *South Britain*,

This NARRATIVE

of his LIFE and ADVENTURES

is humbly inſcrib'd

by his LORDSHIP'S

moſt dutiful humble Servant,

Matthew Biſhop.

518561

THE PUBLISHER TO THE READER.

THE *Authors of* Lives *and* Adventures *generally write from a View to Praiſe, and with a fixed Reſolution to gain it at any Expence. Thus it happens that a Fondneſs to ſet off their own Characters to the beſt Advantage, and ſtrong Deſire to delight and captivate the Reader, make them have Recourſe to Adventures really ſurpriſing, but merely fictitious. At leaſt their Narrations are ſo larded with falſe Circumſtances, that Truth, ſo ſhaded by it's Contrary, can ſcarce be diſtinguiſhed.*

If their Veracity could be depended on in other Reſpects, yet their own Conduct is ſo little defective, that what they ſay of themſelves can never be ſwallowed by any, but the over-credulous and ignorant Claſs of Readers, who believe in Heroes who never exiſted, and whoſe Atchievements can never be equalled.

But the Motive of many Writers of Memoirs is very different, nor do they aim at abuſing the Credulity of Mankind. Their ſole View is to be of Uſe to them by a ſtrict Adherence to Truth, and an impartial Narration of their bad as well as good Actions: That while the latter excites the Emulation of others, the fatal Conſequences of the former may both caution and deter them from following in the ſame Track.

In this Claſs I would rank our Author, and hope that the Reader, by peruſing this Narration of his Life and Adventures, would be edified at the ſame time that he is entertained.

The Period, in which he appeared on the active Stage of Life, is ſtill ſo freſh in the Memory

mory of many, who bore their Part in it; and the grand Events it produced ſo intereſting, that few now living can be ſuppoſed unqualified to expoſe any Miſrepreſentation of the principal Facts mentioned in his Story, had he ventured to falſify them.

A Man of Honour ſcorns to impoſe on the Public, and our Author ſeems to relate nothing but Incidents, wherein he was either an Actor or an Eye-witneſs; and, without Partiality in his own Favour, exhibits both the Good and Bad of his own Conduct.

Though it can't be expected that a Performance of this kind, from one in his Sphere, can merit the Eſteem due to a complete Hiſtory of that intereſting Period, yet it is to be hoped it will be allowed it's Share, if not for the Author's ſake, yet for the ſake of particular illuſtrious Characters he attempts to do Juſtice to. At leaſt this may obtain him Forgiveneſs for any Want of Method or Diction, for which he may be blamed.

His

His Intention is to have an unbiaſſed regard to Truth, and his Hopes are that his Tranſgreſſions in Stile will be ſufficiently compenſated thereby, together with the Variety of Incidents that occur within the ſmall Compaſs of his Work: that while his Actions excite Emulation, and his Reflections inſpire a true Veneration for the Author and Preſerver of all Things; the many diverting Converſations, interſperſed throughout the whole, will be both edifying and entertaining.

THE

CONTENTS.

CHAP. I.

THE Author leaves Oxfordſhire *and goes into* Kent: *His ſtrong Inclinations to go to Sea: Enters on Board the* Swift *Snow.* *Page* 1

CHAP. II.

The Author ſails on Board the Swift *Snow to join the Fleet. The Deſcent on* Cadiz: Vigo taken: *Returns to* Portſmouth. 6

CHAP. III.

They leave Portſmouth, *and chace a Ship into* Breſt: *Sail to* Tangier: *The manner of the* Moors *engaging: Return Home: Meet with a Storm.* 15

CHAP. IV.

They join the Fleet under Sir Cloudſley Shovel, *and ſail to* Gibraltar: *The Taking of* Gibraltar: *They engage the* French *in the* Mediterranean, *and defeat them: They ſail to* Liſbon. 19

CHAP. V.

The Spaniards *beſiege* Gibraltar: *The Author ſails thither and is employed in the Defence of the Town: They carry their Priſoners to* Liſbon: *Hearing the* French *Fleet were at* Gibraltar, *they purſue them and take ſome Ships.* 25

CONTENTS.

CHAP. VI.

They go on a Cruise: Contrary Winds oblige them to half Allowance: Their Provisions almost spent, they arrive at Lisbon. 32

CHAP. VII.

They go on a Cruise and meet with a Storm: The Author goes on board the Fox *Man of War: They go on a Cruise to the* Bay of Biscay *and the* French *Coast, and from thence to* Ireland *to get more Men.* 47

CHAP. VIII.

The Author leaves the Sea Service: Marries a Wife: Settles his Family Affairs, and resolves to try the Land Service. 81

CHAP. IX.

The Author lists in the Land Service: His Success in Recruiting: Lands at Helvoet Sluice: *Goes to* Ghent *and* Autredam: *Remarkable Incidents at both these Places.* 120

CHAP. X.

The Author leaves Autredam, *and marches to* Brussels: *The manner of his being taken Prisoner by the* French *and his Escape from them.* 147

CHAP. XI.

Account of the battle of Oudenarde; *and of forcing the* French *Lines by the Duke of* Argyle: *The*

The Author goes into Quarters with an account of their Oeconomy in the Barracks: Encomiums on the good Conduct of the Generals of the Allies: End of the Campaign in 1707. 150

CHAP. XII.

The Author's Letter to his Wife in 1708: *Embarks for* England: *Meets with a violent Storm: Reflection on the Principle of true Courage: Returns to* Ghent: *Takes the Field. Advice to Officers not to defraud private Men of what is their Due.* 172

CHAP. XIII.

March from Ghent *towards* Liſle: Artois *fortified: Stratagem of Prince* Eugene's: *The Siege of* Liſle: *The Defeat of* 24000 French *at* Winendale *by General* Webb: Ghent *retaken from the* French. 182

CHAP. XIV.

Begins the Campaign in 1709: Tournay *taken by the Allies: Sir* Richard Temple's *Behaviour there: Battle of* Malplaquet: *The taking of* Mons. 200

CHAP. XV.

The Siege of Doway *in* 1710: Bouchain *taken: St.* Venant *and* Aire *beſieged: Remarkable Incidents before the latter: Manner of living in the Trenches.* 219

CHAP.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. XVI.

The Author's Desire to go on the Expedition to Canada: *Arrives in* New England: Indian *King visits their Camp near* Boston: *In great Danger at Sea: Issue of the Attempt on* Quebeck: *Returns to* England: Edgar *Man of War blown up: Goes into Winter Quarters at* Shrewsbury.

CHAP. XVII.

The Author's Desire to be employed again: His Account of the Behaviour of his present Majesty in the late War in Flanders: *Embarks for* Dunkirk: *Mutiny there: The Author returns to* England, *and is discharged.* 257

CHAP. XVIII.

The Author finds his Wife married to another Husband: Her sudden Death and Epitaph: 266

THE Life and Adventures OF *MATTHEW BISHOP.*

CHAP. I.

The Author leaves Oxfordſhire *and goes into* Kent: *his ſtrong Inclination to go to Sea: enters on Board the* Swift *Snow.*

IN the Year 1701 I left the Place of my Nativity, *Deddington* in *Oxfordſhire*, and went to *Canterbury* in *Kent*, where I lived ſome time at a Relation's Houſe at the Sign of the *Three Kings*. During my Stay here his Majeſty, King *William* the Third, came through the Town to go to *Holland*. I gathered all the Flowers out of our own Garden and ſeveral more, to adorn the high Street as he came along; and, with ſome others, ran by the Side of his Coach from *College Yard*, almoſt

two Miles, huzzaing and crying *God bleſs King* William! 'till his Majeſty put his Hand upon the Glaſs, and looking upon us ſaid, *it is enough.* Upon this we deſiſted, and I returned home, but could not be eaſy in my Mind.

Being of a rambling Diſpoſition, I went to viſit a diſtant Relation, one Mr. *Davill* of *Trenly Park*, who was very glad to ſee me, and deſired I would ſtay with him ſome Time. For, as he had a great many Hands employed, he would take it as a Favour if I would aſſiſt him by overſeeing his Workmen. I complied and ſtaid with him about ten Days; but grew very uneaſy, having a ſtrong Deſire to go to Sea. I then bethought myſelf of going to Mr. *Bicks* of *Fordige*, two Miles from *Canterbury*, to try whether he would give me any Encouragement, as he knew all my Friends and Relations. But he begged me not to think of any ſuch Thing, and to return home immediately. His Perſuaſions were all ineffectual, and at length I prevailed on him to let me go along with his Men to *Sandwich*, in order to try how the Water would agree with me. I liked it extremely, and was for going again, but he would not ſuffer me; ſaying, if I pleaſed I might go into his Compting-Houſe and aſſiſt his Clerk, which accordingly I did and continued with him about a Fortnight. The Thoughts of the Sea ſtill ran ſo much in my Mind, that it rendered me unfit for any other than that Profeſſion.

I thought

I thought it would be ungrateful in me, not to take leave of all my Relations in that Part. Wherefore I went to an Aunt's Houſe at *Wye*, and imparted to her my fixed Reſolution. *Have you a Mind*, ſays ſhe, *to break your Friends Hearts? Pray do not think of any ſuch thing; for it will be your utter Deſtruction, if you go without adviſing with your Father about it.* I told her I was abſolutely determined at all Events, and let the Conſequence be what it would. She replied, *ſhe was very ſorry I did not think of ſomething better, as my Friends had been at ſo much Trouble in giving me Education and a Trade for ſome End: therefore, ſhe thought, I ſhould not act the honorable Part by them, if I perſiſted in going.* Theſe daily Checks to my Inclination made me quite weary of her Company; ſo I told her I purpoſed to go to ſee my Uncle, to have his Approbation before I went. *By all means*, ſays ſhe, *and I hope he will turn your Heart from this Way of thinking.* So I took my Leave, begging ſhe would be ſo kind as to drink my Health ſometimes, for I intended to go plough the Main. I then made the beſt of my Way to adviſe with my Uncle at *Harriſon.* But by his declaring againſt any Thing of the Kind, and that he would by no Means in Life be induced to approve of it, *(for if any Thing ſhould happen to me, he ſhould never forgive himſelf)* I found it was not agreeable News to him and he was of my Aunt's Opinion. Therefore I dropt that Diſcourſe, and talked of ſomewhat which I imagined would

be agreeable to him. It was chiefly of his Cattle, and his Lands. I frequently rode out with him in a Morning to look at his Stock. This, and ſome Compliments I made him on his good Management, pleaſed him exceedingly. I diverted him to ſuch a Degree, that I found it a difficult Matter to get away, but at laſt I prevailed, by promiſing whenever I came that Way to call on him and ſtay ſome Time, which I could not conveniently do then.

We parted, and my Reſolution was to go to *Chatham*. When I came there I made it my Buſineſs to enquire what Ships lay in the River ready for ſailing, and was told of the *Swift* Snow, formerly commanded by Captain *Jumper* though then by Captain *Wynn:* I aſked if ſhe was mann'd? They told me ſhe had not her Complement. In the mean time the Purſer came up and aſked me, *If I wanted to ſpeak with any one in the Dock?* I told him I wanted to ſee ſome Officer belonging to the *Swift* Snow, for I intended to go on board her. *Not as a Sailor*, ſays he? I replied it was my fixed Reſolution to go in that Station. Then he deſired me to go along with him to Mr. *Gregory* the Muſter Maſter. It was in *February* 170½ but I have forgot what Day, I entered on board the *Swift* Snow. I was as expeditious as I could in getting my Buſineſs done effectually, though I was offended at the Perſon's telling me a Lie. For he ſaid the *Swift* Snow was in the River, and at the ſame Time ſhe was in the Dock. In the mean time I was ordered on Board the

Princeſs

Princeſs Anne Man of War, till the other came out of the Dock. Here I had the Liberty of going frequently aſhore in the Yawl, and one Time, I think on the 8th of *March*, I heard the News of the King's Death. Shocked to hear of this ſudden Change, I went and told my Companions, and we hurried on Board to inform the Officers of what we had heard. They went on Shore directly, and found it true; and when they came on Board they told us Princeſs *Anne* was proclaimed Queen. This News ſuggeſted ſeveral agreeable Reflections to me: I imagined we ſhould have a ſmart War, and flattered myſelf with the hope of making my Fortune in caſe it ſhould continue any conſiderable Time. But though I had Vanity enough to think I might merit ſomething advantageous to myſelf, and with that View waded through the Wars, with the utmoſt Care and Induſtry, I was nevertheleſs diſappointed. Yet, I hope in the Sequel the Reader will find I exerted my utmoſt Efforts to ſerve my Queen and Country, notwithſtanding my Views of attaining Honours and Advantage to myſelf were not crowned with Succeſs. I ſhall begin therefore with the Incidents of the following Year, and relate all my Adventures both by Sea and Land; from the Beginning to the End of the Wars. With Regard to other Facts related, as having a neceſſary Connexion with the Narrative of my own Life, the Reader may depend on the Truth of them, as I ſhall only mention what I was an Eye-witneſs to.

CHAP. II.

The Author ſails on Board the Swift *Snow to join the Fleet. The Deſcent on* Cadiz: Vigo *taken: Returns to* Portſmouth.

IN 1702 I was in the *Swift* Snow, Captain *Wynn* Commander, and we lay at *Black Stakes* when War with *France* was proclaimed on board our Ship. From thence we went to the *Buoy at Nower*, where ſome General Officers came on board, and we carried them to *Helvoet Sluice* in *Holland*: From thence we ſailed to the *Downs*: Then we were ordered to *Spithead*, to join Sir *George Rook*, who lay there with three Squadrons of Men of War. We were in Sir *Stafford Fairborn*'s Squadron, and ſail'd to make a Deſcent on the *Spaniſh* Coaſt. Our firſt Place of anchoring was in the *Bay of Bulls*, where Sir *Stafford* came on board our Ship, and we weigh'd and went farther in. Then Colonel *Bur* went in the Barge, with a white Flag, to *Cadiz*, but did not ſtay above two Hours. Our Eyes were continually fixed on him to ſee him land, and when he had landed we carefully obſerved his Return to the Boat. He made for our Ship and came on board. The next Day a Signal was given to the *Spaniards*, who were very buſy at work between *Rota* and *St. Catharine*'s *Caſtle*. The Intention of it was to erect a Battery; but we, perceiving what they were about, ſoon prevented them. They are very ingenious at making Faſcine Batteries;

teries ; but we were too briſk for them. For hoiſting ſail we lay along Shore, and ſent them Word by the Mouth of a Cannon to deſiſt from that laborious Employment ; and they were glad to leave it, when the Duſt was flying about their Ears. It created a great deal of Mirth in us, to ſee how they ran, ſome one way, and ſome another. The Work was over with them, but ours was to begin, as you ſhall hear.

We landed our Forces about half a Mile from *Rota*, and the *Spaniards* came down to oppoſe us ; but they went off again when the Shot began to fly about their Ears. Then our Army marched to *Rota* without any Obſtruction. *Rota* lies upon a Deſcent, and is a Place of but little Strength on the Land-ſide where our Army incamped. The Day that the Army was to march there, Orders were given to ſend ſome Seamen on Shore ; ſo our Captain came upon the Quarter-Deck, and all the Men being call'd up, he aſked who was willing to go on Shore to ſerve as Pioneers ; for here, ſays he, are Orders for twenty Men. Let thoſe that are willing come and give their Names to the Steward. I went up and ſaid *Matthew Biſhop*, then we received our Allowance for two Days, went into the Boat and landed at *Rota*, where lay a Cannon which was diſmounted. We looked on it, and took notice of it's being a very long one : and for Curioſity-ſake I laid myſelf upon it with my Arms extended, and it was almoſt three Fathom long. Then we went to

the Town and waited till Evening, when the Army began their March. But one Thing we could not refrain our Eyes from, which was the *Spaniard*, who drove the Duke's Baggage; he had a Spado by his Side, and his Hair was tied behind with a Liſt the ſame which Taylors cut off Cloth. That Morning the Sun ſhone very hot, and marching through the Vineyard we eat ſome Grapes, which made us very dry; and the Scarcity of Water enhanced it's Value. I heard a Crown bid for a Draught or a Quart. I remember we came to a little Pool, and were in great Raptures at the Sight of it. But there was ſo little Water in it, that we took particular care to avoid raiſing the Mud at the Bottom of it, and we thought it at that Time as ſweet as Sack. The Soldiers, ſeeing us drinking, came with ſuch Eagerneſs, that they ran into the Water and drank to Exceſs; and after they had filled their Bellies, filled their Canteens: I believe it was half Mud, but they ſaid like us, it was as ſweet as Sack. We had taken leave of this Pool but a little while before the *Spaniſh* Forces appeared; then our Army began to form and march in grand Diviſions. I muſt own our Generals led on briſkly; and when we came within half a Mile of the Enemy they fled, ſo we ſaw them no more. Then we Pioneers were ordered to go to *St. Catharine*'s *Caſtle*, but we were preceded by a Summons, upon which it ſurrendred. Then we went towards *St. Mary*'s. The Army had then halted. We were very deſirous to know what the Town would afford. It was a Place

of

of but little Strength; for there was a Road went ſtraight into the Street of the Town, upon which we had our Eyes continually fixed. At laſt my Reſolution was to enter the Town; ſo I went with my Comrades, and we took with us Shovels, Cutlaſſes and Piſtols, in order to defend ourſelves in caſe of an Aſſault. Into the Town we went as bold as Lions, and began to taſte their Wines. My Comrade and I went upon the Top of one of their Houſes (I remember it was paved with Tiles) and look'd about us, when all of a ſudden, to our great Surprize, the Pioneers began to run. We did not aſk what was the matter; but I thought it beſt to make to the Company. Here I found it was the Duke of *Ormonde* and the *Dutch* General who had put them to the run. We were conſcious to ourſelves of having entered the Town before them without Orders, and were afraid of being puniſhed. We ſaw them all ride into the Town; but we endeavoured to ſkreen ourſelves from their Sight. It was late before we had Orders to go in; each Squadron, and each Ship's Company were by themſelves. We went into a Houſe, with a Court at the back of it, and we filled the Rooms with Men, for we were obliged to lie Heads and Points, that there might be room enough: We got what we could to cover us and keep us from the Floor. In ſearching we accidentally found a Room where there were a great many Nets and old Sails lying upon the Ground. Amongſt them I found two very good Jackets, and underneath I felt ſomething

thing hard tied up close in a linen Bag. My Comrades saw I had got something of Value, for I could not conceal it from them. It contained sixty Pieces of Eight, and I gave a Fellow that was along with me five to say nothing of it. But instead of concealing he divulged it. I put some in one Pocket and some in another, so that all my Pockets had some, and when I had done laid myself down and had a very sound Sleep. I leave the Reader to judge whether my waking was agreeable: I had laid down with my Pockets full, but when I arose they were empty. This threw me into a very great Passion, especially with him that laid down with me and him that took my Bribe to keep my Prize a Secret. But when my Passion subsided I became very pensive, and seriously reflected on the Deceit of Mankind. Before this Accident I thought I could have confided in and even ventured my Life in my Companion's Hands. But now I resolved to be very cautious whom to trust for the future. As I could not have believed, had I not found it verified by Experience, that any Man could be so great a Rogue, from that Time I formed the Resolution of never being over and above intimate with any one, but to keep them at a Distance. A steady Observance of this gained me more Friends than ever.

After I was pacified, we went into the Town, where we found most of the Houses abandoned by the Inhabitants. Great Havock was made of every Thing, and we continued in the Town till

till we had Orders to go againſt *Point Al Caſtle*. As ſoon as our Orders came we went and broke Ground in a dark Night. We had worked but a little while before we were diſcovered, by a Sea Officer's going too nigh the Caſtle which he imagined to be at a greater Diſtance from him. A Sentinel challenged him, and upon his making off fired; which gave a general Alarm. Immediately we had all the ſmall Shot from the Caſtle and Cannon from the Galleons fired upon us, which made the Duſt fly about our Ears, and we were obliged to work for the Preſervation of our Lives. We had not dug above Knee deep when we were diſcovered, and the Guns from the Caſtle and Ships battered our Works down, and ſwept off our Men, five or ſix at a time, by one Ball. Our Commander, ſeeing we could do no good there, thought proper to break up the Siege, and all the Forces got to *Rota* where they embarked. When we were out at Sea we learnt that the *Spaniards* and *French* were got into *Vigo* with their Fleet: We thought proper to follow them to ſee what Preparations they had made for our Reception, and we found they had heard we were out at Sea and in Purſuit of them. So they had contrived and laid a Boom quite acroſs the Mouth of the Harbour. It was made as ſtrong as the Art of Man could deviſe with Cables, Hauſers, Chains, Spars, Maſts, Ropes, all bound faſt together in one compact Body.

The Strength of this Boom did not diſcourage us, nor did we imagine it a Thing impracticable

practicable to break it. Every Ship was in it's Station, and brave Admiral *Hopſon*, Vice Admiral of the Red, was on Board the *Torbay*. He was a wiſe and valiant Man, had a diſtinct and juſt Apprehenſion of Things, and was extremely active and intrepid in the Execution of grand Enterprizes. He came full Sail againſt the Boom, broke it aſunder and made room for himſelf, and every Ship to ſail in in it's Station. The Enemy had a Fire-ſhip ready to welcome us, which clapt our Admiral aboard as ſoon as he entered the Mouth of the Harbour. His Sails were all in Flames in a Moment; but fortunately the Fire ſhip blew up ſooner than the Enemy intended, to our great Joy; and by the Aſſiſtance of our Boats the Fire was ſoon extinguiſhed. A *Dutchman* had the Honour to ſink the Fire-ſhip's Boat which likewiſe occaſioned a great deal of Joy. When the *French* and *Spaniſh* Fleets perceived the Fire-ſhip had done little Execution, they were in the utmoſt Confuſion and Conſternation. Some ran themſelves on Shore, and others ſet their Ships on Fire with their Guns loaded. I took notice of it to ſome of the Officers and ſaid, " *Gentlemen* " *look here, out of the middle of the Fire comes* " *Fire.*" When the Fire reached the Powder Rooms they blew up. Some Men of War we endeavoured to ſave, and ſome Galleons, which we intended to bring to *England.* I could not avoid reflecting on the Folly of Mankind, in chuſing rather to lay violent Hands on themſelves, than endeavour in their own Defence;

and

and in being driven to Deſpair when they find their Enemy ſuperior in Numbers. Before we left the Place the Soldiers ſacked the Town, and the Sailors the Harbour, and every Thing being effectually completed the Fleet ſet Sail for *England*. The very firſt Day we were out at Sea our Ship ſpied two Sail, and gave Chace. We came up with them a little before Night, fired two or three Guns, and they ſtruck. Then we took the Priſoners on Board and put them in the Hold. The ſame Night we loſt our Main-maſt and Fore-maſt, ſo that we were in a manner reduced to a Hulk. Next Morning we took our Booms and made Jury-maſts. The *French* Officers and Sailors were very ſerviceable in contriving them, and we had great need of their Aſſiſtance. As our Ship was very much ſtrained, ſhe proved very leaky, ſo that at one Time we had four Feet Water in the Well. Another accident had like to have ruined us. A Shot fell into our Well, ſo that we could not work the Pump. This threw us all into the utmoſt Conſternation; for we expected every Moment to go to the Bottom. For ſome time all our Endeavours to get it out proved in vain; at laſt a Man, remarkable for long Arms, pulled it out. This unexpected Relief diſpelled our Fears, and our Joy was proportioned to our former Deſpair.

We ſtaggered along to *Portſmouth*, as well as we could, conſtantly plying our Pumps Night and Day. When our own Crew were tired with this Fatigue, we were obliged to

make the Priſoners help us, placing Sentinels over them with Piſtols and Cutlaſſes for Fear of their mutinying, for they were our ſuperior in Point of Numbers. We had a great many ſick Men. Only two or three out of the twenty Pioneers that went aſhore with me, went out next Year; ſo their Service was at an end, but mine to come. Though this was but poor Encouragement for a young Sailor, yet I was determined to perſevere in running all Hazards. I knowing myſelf to be of an undaunted Courage, thought myſelf on that account a fit Man for that Calling: For inſtead of a Fatigue I always thought it a Pleaſure. While we lay at *Portſmouth* I grew very impatient, for I wanted to be employed in ſome noble Exploit. I had a craving Inclination with a ſtrong Deſire, to humble our Enemies, and bring down their high Spirits and lofty Looks. This ſtifled all Imaginations that might have come into my Mind, had I not been ſo well armed againſt them. Though there are Thouſands who are not, eſpecially thoſe whoſe Weakneſs gets ſo much the better of their Paſſion, as to render them unfit for doing their Country any Service, their Reſolution not being juſtly inclined to ſupport the Honour and Dignity of our Crown and Kingdom, eſpecially at this critical Juncture. Theſe were my Thoughts, which I could not help divulging to moſt of the Men; obſerving the Weightineſs of the Concern, this was my Method of proceeding till we ſet ſail. The Men took it very kindly, and it created freſh Spirits in them.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

They leave Portſmouth, *and chace a Ship into* Breſt: *Sail to* Tangier: *The manner of the* Moors *engaging: Return Home: meet with a Storm.*

IN 1703 we left *Portſmouth* and came to Anchor at *Spithead*, where we waited till we had Orders to go a Cruiſing. When we had been out at Sea ſome Time we ſpied a Sail and gave her Chace. She bore away for the Coaſt of *France* and we made Sail after her as faſt as we could. She ſtood away for *Breſt*, and we came up within a Gun's Shot of her and fired a Chace Gun, but we fired too ſoon, for we loſt Way and ſhe gained; but we followed her between the Land as far as we could, till the Fort fired. Then we thought it high time to leave off purſuing her, for it was impracticable to fight againſt Stone Walls. So out to Sea again we went, and the next Day we ſpied another Sail from our Top-maſt Head, and in a little Time ſhe was viſible to all upon Deck: She bore down towards us and we towards them, for we ſaw that ſhe had *French* Colours: then down Cheſts and up Hammocks, a clear Ship and all neceſſary Preparations was made for an Engagement. But we were diſappointed, for when we came within Gun Shot we pulled down our *French* Colours and hoiſted *Engliſh* and ſhe likewiſe, ſo we found it to be the—— that had Orders to call us to join Sir *Cloudſley Shovel*,

Shovel, for he was out at Sea. Then Gentlemen, ſays I, "up Cheſts and down Hammock's," although I loved to hear the Voice of a Cannon, as well as ſome Men do the Sound of a Bell, and always loved to be in Action. They were all in good Spirits, and we ſailed merrily along to join our Admiral.

The firſt Place we anchored at was near *Tangier*, on this Side the *Streights* Mouth: One Day, while we lay there the *Tangiereen* Horſe were at Exerciſe on the Sands, in two Bodies about three Furlongs, as nigh as I can gueſs, diſtant from each other; and on a ſudden a little Party came from each Body and rid very faſt, till they met together, then they fired and wheeled each to their Troops. It was almoſt like our Foot Exerciſe in taking a Paſs, only they did not march in a Body, but detached about Six from each Body and were like the *Huſſars* for Swiftneſs. We weighed Anchor and went through the *Streights* Mouth. Capt. *Jumper* was then in the *Lenox*. The Duke's Men never had been through, ſo thoſe that had propoſed the others ſhould pay a Bottle. There is no Obligation for it, only the Sailors make theſe ſimple Bargains amongſt themſelves, which often cauſes great Diſturbances. The Officers ſpoke to our Captain about it, and I was glad to hear him ſay, he thought it beneath a Gentlemen to give into thoſe fooliſh Things. And they found by this that the Captain would not comply with them. We ſailed on and came to Anchor in *Altea* Bay and landed.

ed the Marines, they ſtayed on Shore but a little while, before they came on Board again and were to go to *Leghorn* in *Italy*. Then Capt. *Jumper* and the other Ships went from us to *Smyrna*. We had Cruizers out but no Veſſels appeared; and we ſaid amongſt ourſelves, that we had ſwept the Sea clean. We had Reaſon enough to ſay ſo, for it was a long while ſince we had the Pleaſure of ſaluting one, as for my part I began to deſpair of ſeeing another. I longed to be in Action, for my Nature was ſuch that without it my Spirits fell; but when employed or engaged, it awoke thoſe Spirits that were aſleep, and inſtead of being caſt down as Thouſands are, they roſe to ſuch a Degree as to be equal to any. I thank God my Spirits never failed me, eſpecially when there was any Thing to be done either by Engagement or Diſtreſs of Weather. When we came back from *Italy*, we had bad Weather, and our Fleet was ſeparated in the Gulf of *Lyons*; the *Hampton Court* was miſſing for ſome Time, and we thought ſhe was loſt in the Storm; but it was not ſo bad as we imagined, for ſhe appeared at laſt to the great Joy of our Fleet. We came through the *Streights* and caſt our Eyes on *Gibraltar*, but little thought that we ſhould be ſtationed there the next Year.

We cruized for ſome Time between *Sallee* and *Cadiz*, and then went to *Liſbon*; where we lay at Anchor when the great Storm happened, with our Yards and Top-maſts ſtruck and our Hauſers out, for we expected to drive

from our Anchors every Moment. We continued there till *Chriſtmas*, when we ſailed for *England*; and when we came within ſight of Land we did not know it. Some ſaid it was *Plymouth Sound*, others the *Ram head*, and others would aſk where is the *Edyſtone?* But when we came near we found it was ſo, and we put into *Hamouze*. Here we learnt that we had loſt a great many Men of War, and that the *Edyſtone* was blown down in the late Storm. We made our *Chriſtmas* Dinner on freſh Beef, and Plumb Porridge; and diverted ourſelves with obſerving that we had eaten two *Chriſtmas* Dinners in one Year: For as I obſerved before we had eaten one at *Liſbon*. We put to Sea again and ſteered Eaſtward, and was in Company with the *Chatham* Man of War. That Night the Wind blew dreadfully, and we had our long Boat hoiſted upon our Larboard ſide, which cauſed us to run to Leeward. We cut away againſt the *Iſle of White*, and had extreme hard Work to weather *Dunnoſe* though we did weather it. We were obliged to moor Ship, and for three Days the Wind blew deſperately; and by the Violence of the Wind and Aſſiſtance of our Oars, we got out of that deplorable Condition: But we were continually grabling over board for fear we ſhould drive. Though we had the good Fortune to get off clear, there was a *Græcian* that was loſt at the Head of the *Downs*; and a *Dutchman* was drove on the *Goodwin* Sands: But as good Fortune would have it the Wind ſhifted and ſhe

got

got off, though it was by the Providence of God rather than the Assistance of Man, and they would have been utterly demolished had it not been through his Help. We continued in the *Downs* till there was a fine soft Wind, then we came round to *Chatham*, and waited there till farther Commands.

CHAP. IV.

They join the Fleet under Sir Cloudsley Shovel, *and sail to* Gibraltar: *The Taking of* Gibralter: *They engage the* French *in the* Mediterranean, *and defeat them: They sail to* Lisbon.

IN 1704 we left *Chatham*, and made the best of our Way to the *Downs*; where we lay till we received our Orders, and then we steered for *St. Hellens*, and from thence to *Torbay*, where we joined the Fleet that Sir *Cloudsley Shovel* commanded for Sir *George Rooke* was gone before with his Fleet, and the Duke of *Austria* in it. When our Fleet was got together we set Sail for the *Streights*, and met Sir *George Rooke* with his Fleet on this side the *Streights* Mouth. We joined him and sailed a little way up, and then returned and sailed into *Gibraltar* Bay. Then there was a Council of War held; and when they had determined what to do, they landed the Marines and the Prince of *Hesse* with them. Which being done the Boats returned to their Ships, and fifteen Sail were ordered to lye against the Town, un

der the Command of Admiral *Bing*. Every Ship was in it's Station in a ſtreight Line, ready for Command. The Prince of *Heſſe* ſent in his Summons for the Town to ſurrender, which they refuſing, our fifteen Sail poured in their Shot to ſuch a Degree as made the Houſes ſhake, and I believe their Hearts quaked as much as the Houſes ſhaked. We made ourſelves Maſter of the new Mole, and they thought fit to ſurrender; which done every Ship went and anchored in it's Squadron. I could not help pleaſing myſelf with what we had done, and one of the Officers aſked me what made me ſo merry? I replied, Sir, I don't doubt but that we ſhall complete every Thing we undertake. Well, ſaid he, I am glad to ſee you in ſuch good Spirits, and wiſh they may continue. Sir, replied I, I don't queſtion but they will, for I am under no Apprehenſions. I am glad, ſays he, that we have got ſuch a hardy Man amongſt us that Nothing will daunt him. In a little Time we weighed Anchor and ſailed up the *Streights*, and ſome of our Ships went to *T*——in *Barbary* to water. In the mean Time there were ſome of the *French* Fleet in View; the reſt of our Fleet eſpied them, and the *Reſtoration* came to call us as we were watering, with her Top-Gallant-Sheet flying; they told us by a ſpeaking Trumpet that the *French* Fleet was in View. Then we weighed as faſt as poſſible, ſlung our Yards, down Cheſts, up Hammocks, and every Ship in it's Station, for there was a Signal for the Line.

Next Day Admiral *Leak* led the Van with his blue Flag at the fore top Maſt-head. We were about fifty Sail of the Line of Battle; it was a beautiful Line, and would have cheared the Heart of any who loved their Queen and Country to have ſeen it. And the *French* were as beautiful. We ſailed in the Morning till within Gun Shot, looking at each other. When Admiral *Leak* got up to their Van, Sir *George Rooke* fired a Gun, for every Man to be at his Poſt. Then at it we went, loading and firing as quick as poſſible. We were cloſely engaged, and for my Part I loaded twelve Times the eleventh Gun, in ſteering on the Starboard Quarter. And would have loaded more, had not I been prevented, by a Cannon Ball which cut our Powder Boy almoſt in two, and I thought it had taken my Arm off: For it took a Piece of my Shirt Sleeve, which cauſed my Arm, in a Moment, to ſwell as big as my Thigh. I went down to the Doctor and he put a red Plaiſter to it, and would have had me to have ſtaid below; but I ſaid I would go up and ſee how my Comrades ſped, and do all I could as long as I had Hand or Leg to ſupport myſelf. When I came up I found four of thoſe I had left killed, and another wounded. I ſaid to him that was wounded, I am ſorry for your bad Succeſs in this Quarter of an Hour's time. He ſhook his Head ſaying, I wiſh you better Succeſs in all your Undertakings for I am a dead Man. Then I went to work, and as I could uſe my right Hand, my Buſineſs was to

ſtop the Touchhole whilſt the other ſpunged it.

I continued in high Spirits, having no Apprehenſion of Danger, for when I came to be warm at it, it drowned all weak Imaginations; and I ſpirited up thoſe that were faint hearted when they ſaw our Ship like a Slaughter Houſe and they wallowing in Gore Blood. Though I have ſince thought that it made a very ſhocking Appearance, for we were very much ſhattered, which was viſible to all the Fleet. Sir *Cloudſley* ſent a Lieutenant, who when he beheld us, gave us his Voice with a ſpeaking Trumpet, for to tow out of the Line. Our Captain's Spirit was too great for that, ſo he anſwered, that he would not ſtir out of the Line as long as his Ship would ſwim. Thouſands would have been glad of ſuch an Opportunity of getting out of Danger; but our Courage overcame our Fear, though we were much damaged: For they ſhot our Main and Foretop Maſt by the Board; and alſo ſplintered our Main-Maſt, our Fore-Maſt, and our Boltſprit and Mizzen, beſides killing a great Number of Men, which, as I obſerved before, made our Ship like a Slaughter Houſe.

I leave the Reader to judge whether we were much diſabled or not; for we belonged to Sir *Cloudſley*'s Squadron, and he ordered the *Tartar Pink* to lye pretty nigh us. By that we found they were in great Torture for us; and they expected, every Moment, that we ſhould be ſwallowed up. I muſt acknowledge Sir *Cloudſley*'s

Tenderneſs was very great, in ſending a Ship for our Safe-guard to take us in in caſe of the Ship's ſinking, which every one expected to be our Fate. Notwithſtanding we were ſo much diſabled we continued fighting as long as any, which was from Ten in the Morning, till Seven at Night; when the *French* thought proper to ſheer off for fear we ſhould make a greater Slaughter amongſt them. They were pretty much ſhattered, and I believe in the general more than us; which made them ſick of the Lay. So ended the braveſt Engagment ever known, ſince the Memory of Man. All the Officers behaved with Gayety, and their Actions were gallant. The Sailors were very diligent in obſerving their Commands throughout the whole Engagement.

When all was over, we went ſtaggering on in Order to get to *Liſbon*, to repair our Ship; for it was in a horrible Condition. As we were ſteering along, an Officer aſked me, whether I was not the Man that was merry after the taking of *Gibraltar?* Yes, Sir, ſaid I, but you are not the Gentleman that enquired why I was ſo merry. He told me that Gentleman was killed in the Engagement. Sir, ſays I, I am ſenſible of it, and very much concerned for him. He was a good Officer, much of a Gentleman, and knew how to diſtinguiſh Mankind. Chear up your Spirits, and do not let your Courage be caſt down, replied he, behave well and you will be well uſed. Sir, ſaid I, as to my Courage in regard to my Duty it was never dampt,

but I am ſtill in Concern for ſo good an Officer as he was. Though he is dead, yet, ſaid he, while I live you ſhall want nothing that I can help you to. I thanked him for his Civilities, and he told me, he ſhould always reſpect me for his Sake. Thus we parted, and I was very well pleaſed to have ſo much Confabulation with one that might be of Service to me. We had more Conferences than I can remember, and he aſked me whether in any Shape my Spirits failed me in that bloody Engagement? My Anſwer was. No, Sir, I was ſo intent on my Duty to my Queen and Country, that it took off all Fear or Dread that might poſſibly have hung upon my Spirits, for the Preſervation of my own Life, had I not behaved vigorouſly. I like you, *Biſhop*, ſaid he, becauſe your Courage exceeds all I ever ſaw. As for that, Sir, ſaid I, you have ſeen my Behaviour, and I hope to continue in that Diſpoſition of Mind. I beg of God that it may be durable; for while it continues with me I ſhall have Pleaſure, but if it leaves me I ſhall find nothing but Difficulties. This Preſence of Mind made me regarded by Mankind, and even the Officers liked to converſe with me; and the Sailors were always glad to be in my Company. I always endeavoured to create Mirth where I was, and had ſo many pleaſant Conferences, that made it an agreeable Voyage to *Liſbon*. We came to *Liſbon* and had our Ship repaired, for there were Orders for it to be done with all the Expedition imaginable. They went about it immediately, and a great many

many Hands were employed, in different Shapes, about it; but they were a long Time before they finiſhed, and made her complete and fit for another Engagement.

CHAP. V.

The Spaniards *beſiege* Gibraltar: *The Author ſails thither and is employed in the Defence of the Town: They carry their Priſoners to* Liſbon: *Hearing the* French *Fleet were at* Gibraltar, *they purſue them and take ſome Ships.*

BEFORE they had finiſhed repairing our Ship we heard the *Spaniards* had beſieged *Gibraltar*. We made what haſte we could and ſet Sail under the Command of Admiral *Leak*. The Morning we got thither, the *Spaniards* were diſcovered that came up the back of the Hill. Then there was a Command for Twenty of our Men to go on ſhore with fire Arms. I was glad to hear that I was pitched upon for one; and the Sailors, hearing that I was to go, were all eager for going. They knew me to be well verſed in the Affair, as I had been upon a like Expedition before. When the Officers had determined who ſhould go on ſhore, we got into our Boat, and made all the haſte we could: For we had them continually in our Eyes. We were all in high Spirits and fit to do Execution, not being at all daunted at their Numbers; for they were like Swarms of Bees upon the Hill, and in great Confuſion, and we like

like Lions in the Valley, ſeeking whom we might devour; as our Duty required. At it we went, loading and firing as faſt as we could. Our Men had a great Advantage of the *Spaniards* by firing up Hill, and it was a very great Advantage they were not obliged to wade; for the Water often overflows that part where we were obliged to engage them. We were happy enough in miſſing that Tide; had it been otherwiſe, we had been but in a bad Situation. The *Spaniards* rolled Pieces of Rocks down the Hill and wounded a great many of our Men, but our Advantage in firing was more than all they could do. When they found they could do no good they laid down their fire Arms. Col. *Bur* was a Man that had great Compaſſion on a Soldier, and would ſee that they were rightly dealt by upon all Occaſions; and exerted himſelf as far as in his Power in his Queen and Country's Cauſe. I am ſenſible he behaved valiantly and loved to ſee his Soldiers couragious and bold in their Duty. We ſtaid aſhore all Night, and in the Morning returned to our Ship. They found the Duty was too hard for the Soldiers, and then there were Orders ſent for ten Men of a Ship to go on Shore again. They knew I loved to go upon any Expedition whatever; and they loved to ſend me, becauſe I was ſucceſsful and brought them joyful Tidings to enliven their Spirits; when others were confuſed and did not know how to behave. It was a new Thing to them, but ſtill I encouraged thoſe that had any Apprehenſions of Fear within

in them. For I obſerved to them, that let a Man be in what Station of Life he will, if he has not Courage to exert himſelf, he will never gain Applauſe.

When we went over we found that the Works were very much demoliſhed, for there was not a Gun that we could fire one Day without it's being unfit for Service the next; for the *Spaniards* would diſmount them. At *Wills*'s Battery I have ſeen the very Muzzles of our Guns broke with their Cannon Balls: the Round Tower was demoliſhed, and the *North* Baſtion; the Curtain that is between the Bridge and the *North* Baſtion, they battered to ſuch a Degree that a Coach and Horſes might have gone through in ſeveral Places. We found the Duty extremely hard, for what they beat down by Day we were obliged to clear away by Night. There was one of our Men ſaid to me, finding that the Work was as much as any Man could undergo, " *One had better be ſacrificed,* " *than be obliged to work Day and Night with-* " *out Reſt.* This put me into a Rage: And I ſaid to him, *I am ſurpriſed to hear any Man talk ſo madly, and without Thought: How can you reſt when you are environed round with Enemies, that would deſtroy you in a Moment? I would not give a Farthing for the Man that dies under his Burthen. Don't you know that it is for the Preſervation of your own Life as well as others? If you have not Courage to ſupport your ſelf I do not think you a proper Man to come into the Army, to help ſupport your Queen for the*

good

good of our Country. Upon my talking to him in this manner he began to reflect upon himself; and desired for God's Sake, that I would not mention any Thing to the Officers about him in Relation to what he had said, and he owned he deserved Punishment. I told him that I would take no Advantage of him in any Respect, but desired that I might never hear such Things come out of his Mouth any more. He said he would do his Duty as far as in his Power without any grumbling in the least. And after that he was a very good Man and mindful of his Duty. I observed that one might do more with good Words in persuading a Man from bad Inclinations, than by harsh Usage; and I was beloved for so doing by all that knew me. So after these Conferences we went to Work again, and made a Trench under the Wall lest they should storm us. Then we made a large Breast Work under the Bridge in the two Arches. They sent us a great many Bombs, once I thought they had sent us one too many; for I was at Work just in the Bastion, and there came one as swift as Lightning. I had much ado to get out of it's Way, for as soon as it fell, I fell by it; and found it was better so to do, than to step over it, for it blew up in a Moment, which made the Ground tremble. I was not above a Yard from it when it fell, and had I been so unwise as to have stood up when it fell, I should have been lifted up by it's Wings. I was hardened in that Employment, and a great many of our Men ran in a terrible

terrible Fright, thinking that I was blown up. They ſaid, when they ſaw me, we are glad to ſee you alive. I thanked them for their Regard for me, and told them I never minded a Bomb at all; only to obſerve it's falling and ſtep out of the Way, and fall with my Face to the Ground, which I would adviſe you to do if ever they ſhould drop near you; for it will prevent their Effect. They ſaid, they were ſurpriſed that it did not hurt me, as I was ſo near it, and it killed a Man a Furlong off. I told them the Reaſon was this, that when a Bomb falls, it riſes in a Moment again and aſcends perpendicular, breaks and ſpreads to a great Diſtance; and when the Pieces of Steel fall they do great Damage and deſtroy Men at a great Diſtance. Wherefore I would have you always obſerve the Rule I have given you. They returned me a Thouſand Thanks; and we continued making our Works by Night, and in the Day Time we were employed in drawing Guns from the new Mole to *Wills*'s Battery.

We had very indifferent Ground ſome part of the Way, therefore we were obliged to draw in Gears, in the ſame Manner as Horſes do. But when we came amongſt the Rocks we were obliged to lay Deal Spars, and parbuckle them up with Hauſers; and by theſe Means we haled them up to the Battery. When we had drawn all the Cannon up, and provided for our Safeguard, we divided the Priſoners equally, ſo that each Ship might have it's Share. When we had done we went merrily along, and every

Party

Party went to it's Boat, to make for their Ships; we had a Signal to be as expeditious as poſſible, ſo we rowed away for Life, as it was our Duty to do. When we came to the Ship there was nothing extraordinary to be done, only Orders to take the Priſoners to *Liſbon*. Some of the Officers aſked me how I liked the Bombs flying amongſt us? I told them it made us mind our Duty, and enlivened our Spirits; for if it had not been for ſomething to divert us in the Night we might poſſibly have gone to ſleep, but they kept us all awake. They aſked us if we were not ſurpriſed when they came firſt? I told them I was not, though one fell down by me, and I dropped on my Face till it burſt. They ſaid I was very wiſe in ſo doing, and aſked me how the other Men behaved? I told them they had a great Regard for me, for they ran as ſoon as they found it had done all the Damage it could, thinking I was blown up by it. But, to their great Surprize, they found me alive and not half ſo much frightened as themſelves, and I told them how to act in caſe they ſhould be in the ſame Danger; for which they thanked me, and were ſo much enlivened that they became indefatigable, though their Duty was ſo hard as to be fitter for Horſes than Men. The Officers were all very well pleaſed to hear their Men behaved ſo well; and he that profeſſed Friendſhip to me ſome time before, gave me ſomewhat to drink his Health when we came to *Liſbon*, for which I returned him Thanks. We had ſeveral other Conferences together,

gether, and I always thought myſelf as happy as any Man in the World when we were ſailing. I was very well beloved amongſt the Officers, and they were continually urging me to diſcourſe of ſomewhat or other that was agreeable to them; and would often have me into their Rooms to converſe with them.

We arrived at *Liſbon*, and lay there ſome Time, being all in good Health, and very merry while we were there; but for my Part I did not love a long Continuance in any one Place. I loved to be moving on ſome Expedition or other. This was my Inclination, and to my great Joy we heard that the *French* were in *Gibraltar Bay*. On hearing this we made all Expedition imaginable, and came to the *Streights Mouth*, and ſailed up in ſuch a Manner as ſtruck Terror into their Spirits. They endeavoured to make their Eſcape from us, and we thought it hard that they ſhould act as Recreants, to run away; and were in Hopes they would have kept their Station, that we might have made them ſenſible they were the Aggreſſors. Though they thought proper to make off, we thought we might poſſibly come up with them to give them a civil Salute; likewiſe to put them in Mind that we were obliged to viſit them often, for fear they ſhould forget us, which it's probable they would never have done had they ſtaid 'till our Fleet could have come up with them. However ſome of our Fleet got to them, and they fired Starboard and Larboard, and made a good Defence for a great while,

while, and exerted themſelves as long as their Courage would let them. At laſt two were taken by the *Dutch*, one by the *Engliſh*, and two were ſo ſtruck with Fear, that rather than engage us, they run themſelves on Shore, and ſet them on Fire. But what a feeble Excuſe muſt they give to their Maſter when he ſhall call them to Account for their ill Conduct, in deſtroying themſelves, leſt we ſhould? And I could not avoid calling them Hen-hearted Blockheads for being terrified at the Sight of us.

CHAP. VI.

They go on a Cruiſe: Contrary Winds oblige them to half Allowance: Their Proviſions almoſt ſpent, they arrive at Liſbon.

AFTER that we lay free from Moleſtation or Diſturbance from them, and I began to think their *French* Courage failed them, and that they were tired of facing us by Sea. My Thoughts proved right: So we kept cruizing between *Malaga* and *Gibraltar*, and to the Weſt of the *Streights* Mouth, 'till Proviſions grew very ſhort. The Wind was contrary to where we might recruit ourſelves, and continued ſo a great while; which obliged us all to go to Half-allowance: Which the Providence of God directed us to do, otherwiſe we ſhould all have been ſtarved to Death. But his ineſtimable Goodneſs is over all thoſe that acknowledge

knowledge him to be Lord of Hosts: He is infinitely pleased if he can bring Man to Repentance; and I thought, at that Time, that he laid his fatherly Hand upon us to try our Hearts. But had we had Hearts of Stone, it would have been enough to have made them yield, to have Destruction before our Eyes, which, without the Almighty's Assistance, must have been our Fate.

We continued in that deplorable Condition, on half Allowance, a great while, 'till we had almost eat our Provisions up; and we grew very feeble: I must needs confess my Courage sunk, and there were some that were not able to support themselves, especially those that used to love Eating better than Work. For when we had whole Allowance, and messed together, some Men would eat as much more as others; but when we came to half Allowance every one took care to have an equal Share. We kept steering backwards and forwards a great while, but could not perceive we gained Ground at all: 'Till providentially the Wind turned about again, to our great Joy and Comfort. There are but few that can comprehend the Hardships Mankind go through, unless they have been in the like: Neither do they know that Pleasure which overcomes all Fear and Dread. I must needs confess, I was as chearful as any under all Calamities, even Distress of Weather; which I count the most unpleasant Scene at Sea, and often causes Famine, the worst of Deaths. But I went through all these Scenes, depending on the Almighty's Protection; for I was always

ſenſible that Man could not think a good Thought, nor do a good Action, without his Aſſiſtance. I likewiſe thought, if God is on my Side, I need not fear what Man can do unto me. Theſe were the Thoughts that ſupported me, whilſt others were in Torture and Pain, ſome through Fear, and others by Hunger.

Sometimes they would aſk me, how I could be ſo chearful, while others were melancholy? I told them, my inward Man ſupported my Spirits, and cauſed them to flow, while others were ſtarving. I muſt confeſs, when firſt we went to half Allowance, my Spirits were a little lower than uſual; but I believe it proceeded more from being debarred my uſual Quantity, than from Hunger: For, after ſome Time, I minded it no more than if I had had my former Allowance; it had no Effect on my Courage, neither did my Spirits ſink any more during the Time of our coming to *Liſbon*. When we arrived there, our Officers took a very good Method in ſerving the Men their Allowance, to prevent Sickneſs; for they one Day gave them whole Allowance, and next Day half; and continued this Method a great while. Notwithſtanding all imaginable Care to prevent Illneſs, there were ſome of our Men, that had been uſed to eat as much more as others, eat that Day we had whole Allowance to ſuch a Degree, and with ſuch Eagerneſs, that they were like Swine. I uſed to tell them, that they had made a very hearty Repaſt: And ſome of them would be very ſick after eating, and would

ſtrive to hide their Sickneſs, by putting their Hands before their Mouths, and as it came up into their Hands, they would endeavour to ſwallow it again; and were very careful leſt they ſhould waſte any of it, and, like Swine, returned to their Vomit. On my aſking the Reaſon why they eat to that Exceſs, they told me, they had not half enough to ſatisfy them, and that they would eat twice as much the next Time that they had their whole Allowance. Let me adviſe you all, ſaid I, to the contrary; for it is very prejudicial to your Healths: Therefore I would have you refrain from ſuch a monſtrous Quantity. Some ſaid they would take my Advice, as they knew I never gave any that was hurtful: Others were obſtinate, and would not comply with any Thing that was mentioned about Eating, though I told them that eating ſo very heartily, after living low, might throw them into a Fever, or give them a Surfeit in the Blood, that might not leave them ſoon. But nothing would do with obſtinate Men, that were fond of their own Opinions, thinking every one Fools but themſelves: Therefore I left off talking with them any more about it, only told them they would rue it. They continued in that Manner for about a Week or ten Days, when they began to be very much out of Order: Then ſome of them told me, they wiſhed they had taken my Advice. As to my Advice, replied I, you did not think it worth obſerving, therefore your Sickneſs is of your own ſeeking: You

can blame no body but yourſelves, as you were reſolved not to be debarred from Gluttony. I told you my Opinion voluntarily, and would readily adviſe any one for their own Good, if they are willing to receive it; if not, it is only throwing Pearls before Swine. Don't you ſee thoſe that have taken my Advice are very well; and ſo might you, but your Obſtinacy got the better of you, and now you repent; but your Repentance won't make you better in haſte: So I wiſh you well again, but am not a Doctor to cure you; though had you taken my Advice, it would have prevented your Illneſs. One of the Officers aſked me, why I gave myſelf the Trouble of tutoring ſuch ignorant Blockheads? Sir, I replied, it is a Duty incumbent on all Mankind to give Advice where it is required; and to do it in a ſpontaneous, free Manner, oftentimes makes it more kindly received. *Biſhop*, ſaid he, I wiſh all Mankind were of your Way of Thinking. I wiſh they were, Sir, ſaid I, for I have a great Inclination, pleaſe God nothing obſtructs me, to go, after this Sea-fighting is over, and ſee how the Land-Men behave. I have an itching Deſire to be with the Duke of *Marlborough*: I have heard what a noble Exploit he has done on the *Danube*, and it enlivens my Heart, to hear that we have a Man that is endued with ſuch excellent Wiſdom, Knowledge, and Experience, as to be eſteemed of all Mankind. *Biſhop*, ſaid he, you ſpeak very well of the Duke, and I find your Inclinations are with him. Sir, pardon me, ſaid I, but

I, but I believe there will little or nothing more be done by Sea; therefore I abſolutely intend, when I have done my Duty by Sea, to go and ſtruggle through the Land-Service; and though I may be wandering up and down, like a Vagrant, yet I ſhall receive Pleaſure in my own Breaſt in ſerving my Queen and Country, and ſhall not grudge to ſpill my own Blood for the Preſervation of others. I think, ſaid he, you continue in the ſame Reſolution as ever; and I wiſh it may laſt. Sir, replied I, I deſire to live no longer than I can make good my Intentions and fulfil all my Reſolutions. I have hitherto done my utmoſt Endeavours in our Navy, even in that great *Numachia*, when all our Fleet was in Action together: Though I receive nothing for it, yet I have a Pleaſure in my own Breaſt, which will endure when Money will waſte. *Biſhop*, ſaid he, I wiſh it was in my Power to do ſomething for you, as I am ſenſible you are deſerving of it. I returned him Thanks for the Liberty of ſo long a Converſation with him; when he told me, he liked mine as well as any Officer's in the Army.

We continued at *Liſbon* ſo long, that I began to be weary of our Situation. Though we were merry enough and continually diverting ourſelves with ſome new Inventions or other, yet I was not ſo happy in that Station as I ſhould have been on ſome Expedition; for I began to think it long ſince we had a Bout with them. I could not help thinking that the Sea-Service was almoſt at an End, as we had heretofore done

ſuch Execution as obliged them to ſheer off; neither did I think they would venture to look us in the Face any more; which gave me the Pleaſure of thinking that I ſhould one Day ſee the Land-Service, and have Room to exert myſelf in extraneous Lands, when I had extricated my ſelf from this Confinement. Theſe were my Thoughts Day and Night, until I heard there were five Sail of our Ships ordered for *England*, which made me very deſirous to know what Ships were appointed to go: I did not care where they were bound to, ſo they were but in Action; for I loved nothing on Earth ſo well as to be moving from one Place to another. I was ſome Time before I learned that our Ship was one of them which were to ſail; which put me in ſuch Raptures that I leaped for Joy. I likewiſe learnt that the Duke of *Schomberg* was to go with us in our Ship. Our Captain was Commodore; and he ſaid to us, Boys, now I hope we ſhall have a good Voyage to *England*. I anſwered him, Sir, I hope it will be a ſucceſful one; for I would gladly meet with four or five *French* Ships, that we might give them a Salute in a handſom Manner; and had we once the Honour to be ſo near them, they might poſſibly be ſo enamoured as to go along with us. I wiſh, ſaid he, we may have ſuch good Luck; but, I believe, inſtead of being in Love with us, they love us beſt at a Diſtance. Sir, replied I, I have been of Opinion a great while, that they are ſick of the Lay; and don't think we ſhall have any Thing extraordinary done at Sea: Not-

with-

withſtanding they are afraid to face us, yet they continue their Spite againſt us, and are facinorous and villainous enough to deſtroy us behind our Backs, unleſs we keep a Guard over them; but I believe a trifling Guard will be ſufficient to ſtrike Terror into their Breaſts, and prevent thoſe villainous Proceedings which they would be guilty of. They would be guilty of every thing that is bad, were it in their Power. *Biſhop*, ſaid he, but they are obliged to acknowledge us Maſters of the Sea, and are afraid of attacking any Thing in our View: Our Men are active and vigorous, which prevents their triumphing over us. Sir, replied I, I am glad to hear your Obſervations in regard to your Men; it ſhews your Reſpect to them; and I believe you are ſenſible they behave well and deſerve it.

We ſailed from *Liſbon* with the Duke and all his Baggage, and convoyed ſome Merchant Ships to *Port*, where we took ſome more under our Convoy, and made the beſt of our Way to *V* * * *; there we encreaſed the Number of our Merchant-Ships, ſo that we were a brave Company, and ſailed along merrily, having a very pleaſant Voyage all the Way. While we were ſailing, the Wife of one of the Duke's Gentlemen was delivered of a Child; which, being ſo uncommon a Thing at Sea, cauſed a great deal of Mirth, and the Gentleman gave ſomewhat amongſt us to drink the Child's Health. So we paſt the Time merrily, and I took an Opportunity the firſt Time I ſaw the Child's Father, and obſerved to him, Sir, as the Al-

mighty has thought proper that the Seas ſhould produce you a Son, pray let it be his Profeſſion, and you need not fear but his Calling will be agreeable to his Conſtitution; his Actions will gain him Honour and Applauſe, and you may congratulate him on his Succeſs. The Man was ſtruck dumb for ſome Time; I thought he was afraid of uttering his Words; at laſt his faint Speech came out, and he ſaid, I intend my Son for a better Uſe, eſpecially more to my own Satisfaction. Sir, pardon me, ſaid I, as to a better Uſe, it is impoſſible; for it is ſo honorable a Calling, that the Sons of Kings and Queens follow it: Therefore I would not have you deſpiſe that Calling by which the Hand of God is leading you to a Place of Safety. He left me without Reply; therefore I took him to be a proud, ſtubborn Man, that was above ſpeaking to any below himſelf. He was offended, and would not accept of any more of my Confabulations, neither would he let me ſee him during our Voyage to *England*. I was very ſorry to give any Offence by innocent Diſcourſe, for I did not mean to offend him in the leaſt, but only to paſs Time away. If we were confined from talking, we ſhould be very unhappy; but our Tongues are at Liberty to ſpeak our Sentiments, provided we do not apply them rudely: I would have all Men to know their Diſtance; and though a Man may have the Favor of his Maſter's Converſation ſometimes, yet I would not have him grow upon it, and take offenſive Liberties.

When

When we came to *England*, we landed the Duke and all his Company and Baggage at *Deal:* As we were taking the Gentleman, his Wife and Child into the Boat, to ſet them on Shore, I could not help making myſelf known to him, and ſaid, Sir, I hope you will pardon me for what I obſerved to you about the Child, ſome time ago; I meant no Harm, neither would I perſuade any one againſt their own Inclinations: But without Doubt, Sir, you are ſenſible that all Mankind are apt to ſpeak well of their particular Callings. It is very true, replied he, what you ſpeak in relation to Mankind; though, I muſt confeſs, I was diſpleaſed at your Application to me in that Manner: But, as you acknowledge the Nature of the Thing, I forgive you. After I had preſſed him in that Manner, I found by his Looks, that he began to reflect upon himſelf, and made an open Confeſſion at laſt; and when we came on Shore, he gave me a Bottle of Wine, and after we had drank it, we parted good Friends. I returned to the Ship, and we made the beſt of our Way to *Chatham*, where our Ship was condemned, and the Men turned over, ſome on board the *Breda*, and ſome to the *Ipſwich*. For my Part, I was to go on board the latter, againſt my Inclinations, for I had a Fancy to go on board the *Breda*: I continued very uneaſy, becauſe I had more Value for the Captain of the *Breda* than for him with whom I was; not that I had taken any Antipathy, only that I had ſome Knowledge of the other; therefore from that my Inclinations

clinations or Veneration aroſe. After I had placed my Reſpect there, nothing would ſatisfy me till I had accompliſhed my Deſire; which I did in a very ſtrenuous Manner. I was obliged to be very active in my Proceedings; had I not, I muſt have continued in the Place firſt appointed, but I left no Stone unturned while it was in Agitation. There was no Time to delay; our Ship was ordered to go a cruizing; therefore I applied myſelf in the following Manner: As I was unacquainted with the Captain, I made all the Interceſſion I could with all the other Officers, to ſpeak to the Captain in my Behalf, and they were ſo kind as to do it: The Captain's Reply was, as they told me, Gentlemen, I have had a very good Character of this Man, that he is the beſt Man that ever went into a Ship, and will be of more Service to me than twenty others; therefore I am unwilling to part with him. The Officers then were ſo kind to obſerve, Sir, the Man is ſeemingly very uneaſy, and if he ſhould go againſt his Inclinations, it is poſſible he may not prove ſo good as you expect; therefore, was the Caſe ours, we would let him follow his Inclination, eſpecially as he has puſhed for it ſo ſtrenuouſly. Then he told them, that, ſince my Deſire was ſo ſtrongly bent on going, that in two or three Days he would conſider of it. The Officers were ſo kind as to tell me this Diſcourſe, which gave me Hopes of accompliſhing my Deſign; but I had much rather the Captain had not received any Character of me, for his receiving it in that

Manner

Manner made it reaſonable to think he would be unwilling to part with me. Wherefore I ſaid to the Officers, Gentlemen, the Captain has received a better Character of me than I deſerve. I had ſcarce ſpoke the Words, when the Captain came, and aſked me the Reaſon why I was not willing to continue with him? Sir, pardon me, ſaid I; I have taken no Antipathy againſt any belonging to the Ship, but as I have ſet my Heart on going in the other, I beg the Favour of you to be ſo kind as to relinquiſh the Power you have over me: Not that I want a general Releaſe from the Queen's Service, but only to be turned over to where my Inclinations lead me; for I would rather ſuffer——than be diſappointed, and would rather undergo the greateſt Hardſhip Mankind could inflict on me, than comply with what is not agreeable to me. The Captain left me, and ſaid he would conſider of it. Then I thought it high Time for me to conſider, and could not help reflecting thus. Oh Man! what have you been doing, that your Servitude will not gain you ſuch a ſmall Spark of Friendſhip as this is? Had I been guilty of Indifference, or Careleſneſs of Behaviour, or Indiſcretion in making or being guilty of Drunkenneſs; had I been, poſſibly I might have received greater Favor; for it plainly appears, that Mankind will prefer the indifferent Servant before the diligent.

Theſe and many other Reflections occurred to me, thinking that the upright Man muſt be oppreſſed while Indignity will flouriſh. After

ſome

ſome Time the Captain aſked me if I continued in the ſame Mind? My Anſwer was, Sir, my Mind is not ſubject to Change, it is ſtedfaſtly fixed and I ſhall always continue in the ſame Diſpoſition. Well, ſaid he, ſince you are endued with ſuch Reſolution of Mind, take this Letter, and go to the *Breda* and give my Service to the Captain: This put me in great Raptures, I returned him Thanks, and made the beſt of my Way to the Ship. When I came there the Captain ſaid he was glad to ſee me, I thanked him and ſaid, I was overjoyed to ſee him, though it was with great Difficulty that I obtained that Favour, for they were unwilling to part with me. I thought as much, ſaid he. Why ſhould you think ſo, Sir, ſaid I? He has had no Trial of me. Though he has not, replied the Captain, undoubtedly he has heard of your Character. Sir, ſaid I, I am ſenſible of it. Then, ſaid he, that is the reaſon of your Detention, and he would have kept you by Force if it had not been for Devoir, or the Rules of Civility and Reaſon which all Mankind ought to obſerve. After this Conference I was very well aſſured that I had accompliſh'd my Deſign. I think proper to obſerve, that had I went againſt my own Inclinations from one of the moſt active Men in the World, I ſhould I believe have become the greateſt Drone; neither do I think I ſhould have been able to exert myſelf in any Thing, but ſhould have been like a Lump of Lead: And not having Spirits enough to ſupport myſelf, how is it poſſible I ſhould help to ſupport

port others? And this is the Case of most that are forced against their Inclinations. I will venture to say that fifty Men that are vigorous will do more Execution than two hundred Drones. It is often seen in press'd Men that they are stubborn and sulky, and ready to comply with any Thing that is villainous. I have known Men that have been ready to go into foreign Service, rather than serve under a particular Man; though it was my daily Endeavour to turn their Hearts, and I had very good Success in so doing; for had I not spirited up our Men that were backward in exerting themselves, instead of defeating others we might have been defeated. For this Reason I would have no Man obliged to do any Thing but what he does spontaneously; for then there is no Question but he will be vigorous in his Proceedings, and it will render him capable to exert himself when required. But others are inert, and useless, and can effect nothing but their own Destruction. Therefore there ought to be proper Means used to bring such Men into the Army as are given to Industry and indefatigable, for there is no Good comes of slothful Men, neither are they fit for any Thing but to continue Vagrants as they are. There is another Thing I would observe, which is, that Parents should study the Disposition of their Child before they put him Apprentice, and see whether he be inclinable to such a Calling or not; lest, like myself, he should be bound to a Trade which he dislikes, though I had Resolution

tion enough to continue my Apprenticeſhip out; but when I was out of my Time, I could not confine myſelf to my Buſineſs, although my Friends ſet me up with a very good Stock, and had I not had an utter Averſion to it I might have made myſelf very happy: After ſome Time I left off my Buſineſs and was changed to a roving Diſpoſition of Mind, living on what I had, till there was talk of a War. Then I reſolved to go, and liked it extremely well; though it might have been Thouſands in my Way had I continued my Buſineſs, but no one could perſuade me from throwing away the Flower of my Youth in the Queen's Service. But though I did ſo well, there are Thouſands that get into bad Company and meet with an ill End; which is the Fruit of all thoſe that complot together amongſt Rogues. This a Youth oftentimes too readily complies with, eſpecially, if he be croſt by his Parents, therefore he throws his Reſentment on himſelf, and will not give Attention to any Advice of his Friends; but is fully bent on his own Ruin. Another Thing which I think proper to obſerve, is with Relation to Servants; for I would not have any one, through any Perſuaſions whatever, go to Service unleſs he goes ſpontaneouſly: If a Servant goeth with a good Will, the Maſter will have a good Servant of him; otherwiſe they give no Attention to their Duty, but do every Thing with Indifferency, till at laſt the Maſter perceives it, and diſcharges them from his Service without a Character; when the poor Man lies lurking about

about till he has ſpent his Money and can't get any Buſineſs; for none will employ him if they know him to be a Gentleman's Servant becauſe they have the Character of idle Fellows; ſo the poor Creature being drove to Indigence, Neceſſity, the Mother of Invention, will do any Thing rather than ſtarve; and being drove to their laſt Shifts, there are enough ready to back them to their own Deſtruction, Life is ſweet and Plenty comfortable; though perhaps their Inclinations before were not inclinable to Ill: For Indigence oftentimes obliges Men to do that which otherwiſe they would not have done. And ſome Men are ſo fond of oppreſſing, that they will even make their Brags of their villainous Proceedings without any Remorſe of Conſcience.

CHAP. VII.

They go on a Cruiſe and meet with a Storm: The Author goes on board the Fox *Man of War: They go on a Cruiſe to the* Bay of Biſcay *and the* French *Coaſt, and from thence to* Ireland *to get more Men.*

WE ſet out and ſailed Weſtward, and kept cruiſing a great while without meeting with any Thing to exert ourſelves: I longed to be in Action, and was afraid that we ſhould forget how to behave ourſelves, as it was ſo long ſince we were ingaged. I uſed to walk backwards and forwards, and on a ſudden would ſtop

ſtop and lay hold of a Gun, and ſay to myſelf, Oh! was I but exerciſing you, I would make our Oppoſers tremble: And I promiſed myſelf ſhould we meet with any we ſhould ſhew them what Metal we were made of: Even I thought were all of my Reſolution we ſhould be ſtrong enough to engage four times our Strength. For I always told our Men it was not the Body but the Courage that repelled. It was a great Sign our Enemies were ſtruck with Fear, or elſe we ſhould have perceived ſomething of them, nay we even ſearched all the Creeks we could in expectation of ſomething, but in vain; therefore I could not help ſaying to the Captain, Sir, this is as fruitleſs a Cruiſe as I had up the *Mediterranean* in Purſuit of the *French* and *Spaniards*, therefore I have but little Pleaſure in it. He replied, *Biſhop*, I am very ſorry that it happeneth ſo, for I ſhould be glad to meet with ſomething to ſee how active you all are. Sir, ſaid I, you need not queſtion, if we have the good Fortune to meet with any Thing, but our Actions will be vigorous. We had a pretty long Conference together about our fruitleſs Cruiſe: My Captain was a very eaſy familiar Gentleman, and was always ready to hear an Inferiour, which gained him the Love of all, and ſhould have been glad of an Opportunity to have helped to gain him Honour. It was my Temper even to lay down my Life to ſerve thoſe that are worthy of Honour; and I believe I ſhall always continue in the ſame Mind, for nothing ever affected me, in regard to Mankind, to deſerve my Hatred.

Therefore I have a Pleaſure in my own Breaſt, as likewiſe an undaunted Courage that nothing will ſtrike with Fear.

As we were cruiſing about we met with a Hurricane, in which we loſt our Main top Maſt; ſo that after the Storm was over we could not make any Way. But fortunately the *Worceſter* Man of War was near us, and took us in Tow. Yet we were a long time before we reached *England*, when we put into *Hamouſe* at *Plymouth*, and there we eat our *Chriſtmas* Dinner with good Appetites, for freſh Beef and Plumb Pudding was a Novelty to us: I continued there a little while waiting for Orders. Before we had any Orders I obſerved to the Captain, that I hoped he would have better Succeſs in his next Cruiſe, for, ſaid I, we have done nothing to deſerve your Commendations in this, neither have you had any Example of us; and without Trial it is impoſſible you ſhould know how I could exert myſelf: had any Thing been in my Way I would have ſhewed an Example that others might have followed. *Biſhop*, replied he, I ſhould be glad of the Opportunity, and could not help having Anxiety at being ſo unfortunate as not to meet with any Thing. Then I told him, that I would go into the *Fox* and ſee what I could meet with there; he ſaid I ſhould have his Prayer go where I would, for I was a merry Fellow, ſo we parted.

In 1706 I went into the *Fox* and was very kindly received by all the Officers, who ſaid to me, you ſhall be very well uſed in our Ship,

for we have heard your Character, and if any Thing happens you ſhall have the Chance of it; therefore we would have you continue the ſame Reſolution as uſual, for we have had a Value for you ever ſince we have heard of your Behaviour; and we find that you was agreeable to the whole Ship from the higheſt to the loweſt, and that the Sailors obſerved your Inſtructions and would comply with every thing you deſired, therefore we are glad to have ſuch a Man amongſt us that can win the Hearts of all; and if you behave as well as you have done heretofore you ſhall want no Incouragement. I told them, they need not queſtion but my Behaviour would be the ſame to all Mankind, and as for the Sailors, I thought it was a Duty incumbent on me to give Advice to thoſe that were inclinable to be vicious; therefore I took upon me to reprove thoſe Men leſt they ſhould err, and by their Means we might be drawn into Errors; and that I thought it was my Duty to my Queen and Country to be agreeable to all. When our Diſcourſe was almoſt over, and I had found out the Gentlemens Tempers, I ſaid, Gentlemen, I hope we ſhall meet with ſomething that I may ſhew you my Dexterity, and you ſhall ſee how your Men will exert themſelves; I believe there were none of your Men at the great *Numachia*; I believe they are moſt freſh Water Sailors, but if I continue amongſt them I ſhall make them ſalt Water Sailors; and they ſhall not want for Inſtructions if they are capable of receiving any, and I will do my Endeavour to make

make them as bold as Lions when they come to face their Enemy. So I thanked them for their kind Reception, and we parted.

Soon after we went a cruiſing on the Coaſt of *France*, and from thence to the *Bay of Biſcay*, where the Sea ran Mountain high; and ſome of our Men, whom I called freſh Water Sailors, were in great Torture. I muſt confeſs it was a ſurpriſing Tornado, and there were Orders for the Maſts to be ſtruck, to lower the Sails and down with the Yard-Arms: So we put our Ship in a Poſture of Defence againſt the Sea and receiv'd no Damage. Then I ſaid to thoſe that were in Torment all the while the Tornado continued, Gentlemen, I am much ſurpriſed to ſee you all in ſuch Agonies at ſo trifling a Thing as this is; had you been with me in the *Mediterranean* you would have thought all nothing; for I have ſeen Clouds of Water even cover the whole Ship, and was never ſtruck with ſo much Fear as you are now. Therefore do not let your feeble Courages be caſt down; for if you continue at Sea as long as I have, you will go through ten times worſe Storms than this: And a Sailor ſhould never be afraid of any Thing the Sea can produce; for if your Fear once gets the better of your Courage, you will be of no uſe at all: Therefore I would adviſe you as a Friend to reflect upon yourſelves. With this Application I found they began to revive, and told me they thought it could not be worſe than this was, but ſince it were ſo they need not have been under ſuch

Apprehenſions of Danger. You may be aſſured, replied I, that what I ſay is right, I will not deceive you nor any one elſe. When our Diſcourſe and the Tornado was almoſt over I found they began to be intuitive; but was afraid they would be inconſoleable, they were in ſuch great Torture, wiſhing they had never come to Sea. I thought ſome of them would have jumped over board, for they were juſt like Madmen, ſo that I had enough to do to pacify them; though I thought nothing a Fatigue that I could accompliſh, in endeavouring to do any one a Piece of Service: for as I always thought it my Duty, it was a Pleaſure to me, and I would detect Things that would be a Detriment to them, in caſe I found them of a placable Temper. This was my Manner of Behaviour to my Companions, and they would often acknowledge my Civilities to them: And I muſt confeſs that I never adviſed any Man but he complied with me, and I never thought much of my Time.

When the Tornado was over, and every one eaſy, we ſteered for the Iſle of *Scilly*, and when we came there we lay at Anchor for a while, for our Captain lov'd to be cruiſing from one Place to another. He ſeemingly was a very active Man, and I believe long'd to be in Action as much as I did; for he often told me he was afraid that I ſhould have no Opportunity to exert myſelf. Sir, replied I, I ſaid ſome time ago that we had ſwept the Seas clean, and now I think my Obſervation is made out: Therefore

after

after this Cruiſe, if we ſhould not light on any Thing, I will decline going to Sea any more, for it makes me exceſſive dull and ſtupid to have nothing to enliven and raiſe our dead Spirits. I think we might as well be dead as without Action; we had not uſed to be ſo long without ſome Exploit, and I believe I ſhall never be happy till I can help to perform ſome noble Atchievement or other; for my Inclinations are to humble the proud Spirits of our Enemies; for I muſt needs confeſs it is our own Faults that they triumph over us: For we are endeavouring to enrich our Enemy's Country by impoveriſhing our own, and are ſo unwiſe as to encourage them in every Thing, to the Diſcouragement of our own People: For an *Engliſh* Servant, Taylor or Peruke-maker can't pleaſe the Gentlemen, nor an *Engliſh* Milliner the Ladies: and for Faſhions we are intirely oblig'd to *France*. This makes our Natives diſpirited and diſconſolate, while their Ambition is to deſtroy us. I am ſurpris'd ſuch wiſe Men as we have in *England* can't detect the Thieves that pick their Pockets, even before their Faces. Either they cannot or will not ſee them. I hope, Sir, ſays I, you will excuſe this Freedom, and I'll to work. — Accordingly to weighing our Anchor we went, and ſail'd up the Channel and anchor'd at *Torbay:* We lay there but a ſhort Time, and the Captain thought it was not to our Advantage to lie idle a Moment longer than was neceſſary; therefore he ordered us to weigh again, which we did with

a great deal of Pleaſure. I was glad to ſee our Captain ſo briſk in forwarding us, for he ſaid, I deſire you will be as expeditious as poſſible, which we were, and then kept cruiſing about for a conſiderable Time but could not hit on any Thing; which made me think us very unfortunate. We put into *Catwater*, and juſt as we had caſt Anchor the Weather began to be extremely rough, and we expected to drive every Moment: to prevent which we carried a Cable and faſtned it round the Rock, which was a Security to us againſt the Severity of the Weather. Some of our Men were backward in going into the Boat to carry the Cable; I ſaid I would go, and then they were eager of going; thinking they ſhould ſhare the ſame Fate as I did. But juſt as we came to the Rock two of them fell over board, when fortunately a large Wave drove them to us, ſo we haled them into the Boat; but they were above half an Hour before they recovered; ſo we faſtned the Cable without their Aſſiſtance, and juſt as we had done they fell a vomiting prodigiouſly. I ſaid to my Companions, now I find they will do again, for their Bellows begin to play, which cauſes Sickneſs: they will throw up all the Salt Water and be well again preſently, and according as I obſerv'd it happened. Then I aſked them whether they remembred any Thing when they were pulled out of the Water, or when they were in the Water? They anſwered they remembred falling into the Water and ſtruggling for ſome time with great Torture, till the Water

Water overcame their Spirits; then they felt nothing, neither did they remember being pull-ed out of the Water. I hope, ſays I, you will acknowledge you were in the Jaws of Death, till the Almighty thought fit to reſtore you by the Direction of a Wave, (for they could not ſwim). We went to our Ship again, and the Men were not for our telling it, though it was im-poſſible but the Men in the Ship muſt ſee it, which they did; and began with us, aſking how the Men happen'd to fall over board? We ſaid as it was, that they ſat together very careleſſly, and as we were near the Rock a Wave nearly overwhelm'd us, and they pull'd each other in; and the Rolling of the Waters took them out of our Sight, till a Wave came and drove them near us. Had I not been very briſk they would have drove againſt the Rock, but we took hold of them as they came by. They were very much delighted that we had ſuch good Fortune to ſave their Lives unexpectedly, but Providence was their Deliverer.

When the Storm was over we cruis'd to-wards *Ireland*, and put in at the *Cove* at *Cork*. As ſoon as we were ſettled we had an Order to go on ſhore to preſs Men, and a pretty large Body of us went. I, knowing that the greateſt Part of us were licentious Men, was afraid if we went all together we ſhould do no good. There-fore I made a Propoſal to them, but had a long Conference before I could get the licentious Men to comply; but at laſt I accompliſh'd it and endeavour'd to get thoſe with me that were li-

beral and facetious, and could make any thing agreeable that we ſhould meet with. The Men I choſe were placable and could put up with an Affront. When we were agreed we divided into two Bodies, and they went in at one Part of the Town and we at another. Then I ſaid to our Company, I don't doubt but we ſhall get twice the Number of Men that they do, if you will be conformable, and of one Way of thinking; for we ſhall do no good if there is any Repugnancy or Diviſion amongſt us. They ſaid they would comply with any Thing that I thought right. I could deſire no more, only ſaid, I hope you will have Reſolution enough to keep your Words. They ſaid, I might depend on them. Then I ſaid, I have a Mind to ſee what good Uſage will do, for I have a Notion it will do more than rough; if not, we can but compel them at laſt. I know Mankind don't love to be compelled to any Thing. I think it will be proper to go to one of the beſt Inns and have a Pint of Wine each Man, which will revive us and make us fit for Buſineſs, and when we are there we will conſult how to act. While we were drinking I ſaid, thoſe that can play on any ſort of Inſtrument I would have you provide yourſelves. Then one of the Men belonging to the Inn came to us, and we deſired him to get us a Fiddle, Hautboy and a pair of Bag Pipes. When we had got them we went juſt out at the Door, and they played and we danced for a conſiderable Time, till moſt of the idle part of the Town came to viſit us, which was

what

what we wanted: Then we called for a Bottle of Wine to drink the Queen's Health. We drank a Glaſs apiece which emptied the Bottle, and ſent for another. I ſaid to the Populace, ſee how we live my Boys! with our Pockets full of Money to ſupport us while you are ſtarving. I am ſurpriſed you that are indigent never think of going to Sea, for ſeveral make their Fortune by going; and ſuch clever young Men as you are need not fear gaining ſomething advantageous for yourſelves, if you could perſuade ſome body or other to take you. O Lord! ſays the Men, there was a Preſs Gang up in the Town but we made our Eſcape from them, ſo we ſhould not find it a Difficulty to get in. Ay, my Boys, ſaid I, but it is a great Favour to get in, becauſe thoſe that are permitted to enter voluntarily are better looked on than preſt Men; for the Officers will ſhew them Reſpect while the others are confined like Priſoners, ſo that none that are wiſe will put it in their Power to preſs them; for there is a wide Difference between being preſs'd and going Voluntier. A Preſs Gang take all without Exception, and treat them with very rough Uſage. Therefore if any of you young Men have a Mind to go, not that I would adviſe you againſt your Inclinations, but if you are determined to go I would have you go voluntarily. They anſwered, if they did go they would go all together: I then called for another Bottle, and gave each of them a Glaſs, being glad to hear their Intimation; and thinking good Living would be a great Inducement,

ducement, I took them into the Houſe, and gave them a cold Buttock of Beef ſtuffed. They eat and drank very hearty, and were worth taking Pains with, for they were nine clever young Men, and ſeemingly very fit to make fine Sailors. When they had eat and drank what they thought proper, they ſaid they had never fared more to their Liking in their Lives. I told them nobody lived better than we did. They replied, they wiſhed they could go in a Ship without being preſſed, and be well uſed, they would go with as much Pleaſure as they had eat that Dinner. I could deſire no more, for I was ſenſible they had eaten their Dinner with a good Appetite. I ſaid to them, ſince you are ſo inclin'd, I will endeavour to make Intereſt to get you all into our Ship if I can, if not, you ſhall return as you came; but there is another Thing, I will not take you if any of you think you ſhall reflect on me for it; I aſſure you I do it for your Good. They promiſed me they would not, and that they ſhould be glad to go with me. Upon that I engaged them and took them all along with us to the Ship, where they were very kindly received: And I obſerved to the Men that were with me, now you have found every Thing that I ſaid is come to paſs; and that good Uſage will always carry the Point. Soon after the other Party came and brought three clumſey Fellows as ragged as Colts.

When we were all together the Officers aſked us, why we did not go in a Body together?

Sir, I replied, it was an Agreement among our ſelves, therefore I hope you are not diſpleaſed at it: For had we gone together there would have been no Good done; for inſtead of following and intimating their Minds to us, we ſhould intimidate them, as ſeveral of them ſaw the Preſs Gang and ſhunned them. And as I found ſome of our Men were licentious and ready to diſpute whatever I propoſed, I could not be eaſy till I had ſeparated them: For I was always of Opinion that whatever Expedition Men undertook, if they were not thoroughly agreed how to proceed, they muſt expect nothing but Deſtruction; for a Houſe divided againſt itſelf cannot ſtand. And I believe that they are now thoroughly convinced that I was right; for they ſay they are ſorry that they did not follow my Directions, which they ſaid would have been the chief Inſtrument to have done Buſineſs. Sir, if you pleaſe to give me leave I will make a Compariſon: had there been ſuch a Repugnancy at the great *Numachia*, or any Atchievement whatever, it would have been but ſmall Recompence after Thouſands were ſacrificed through the Power of ſome hot headed Men that will not be conformable to Counſel, but will perſiſt in their Obſtinacy to their own Deſtruction; which is the Fruit of all ſtiff-neck'd People that are ſo fond of their own Opinions as to think none ſo wiſe as themſelves. *Biſhop*, ſaid he, I like your Compariſon very well, and think that where Life depends hot headed Men ſhould not be concern'd. He left me and I obſerved by his

his Speech that he had a Feeling of Humanity in him, which cauſed me to have a greater Regard for him than before; and at that Time I would have gone through Fire or Water to have ſerved him, and would even have laid down my Life for thoſe that had a feeling Tenderneſs for Mankind. Soon after he left me, there were Orders to weigh Anchor, and we were commanded to go to *Waterford* to preſs more Men. When we came there the Captain ordered twelve Men to go on Shore, and I was pitch'd on for one: For my Part I always loved to be employ'd, and did not care how they diſpoſed of me ſo that my Blood was but in Motion; and when I knew what I was going about my Heart was continually inventing ſome new Stratagem, that might be agreeable to the Company I was with. The Men that were with me ſaid they would comply with any Thing that I thought right; I thanked them, and ſaid I would think as well as I could, and ſince we muſt have Men I would do my utmoſt Endeavour to bring them into our Company. Then we all went into an Alehouſe and made ourſelves cheerful that we might have Spirits to exert ourſelves. Here I aſked the Men that were with me whether they would like to play at Football, which I propoſed becauſe they were very active young Men. They agreed and we made the Match for a Crown a Man. It was juſt at the ſide of the Town that we played, and were not long beforre we had Company enough to viſit us, which was the Thing I wanted. We played a conſiderable

rable Time before our Game was up, and the Company we had was innumerable. Some ſaid they would play with us; I was glad to hear that, and ſaid we are twelve of us, and will play with the beſt Men you can pick out of the whole Company for what Money you will. On my ſaying that it was not long before they got twelve Men in Oppoſition to us. I muſt needs ſay they were well made Men, and very fit for what I intended. They were for playing immediately, but I deſired they would excuſe us till we had drank a Pint of Beer each Man, and if they would favour us with their Company, they ſhould have part of it, and then we could make our Agreement what to play for. They were not for going till I told them that I was exceſſively dry; and that we would not ſtay above a Minute. With that they ſaid they would, which I was very well pleaſed with. When we came to the Alehouſe we called for a Gallon of the beſt ſtrong Beer they had, and as we were a large Company we would have the biggeſt Room in the Houſe. When we had drank about three Gallons they were for going. I deſired they would ſtay and help to drink another and then we would all go. While we were drinking the laſt, I aſked them ſome Queſtions, whether they were married, what Buſineſs they followed, and whether they ever had any Thoughts of going to Sea? They anſwered, they were none of them married, nor had they any ſuch Thoughts, as they took the Sea to be fit only for thoſe that could not get Bread by Land. I was glad to

hear that they were all ſingle Men, becauſe I promiſed myſelf never to diſappoint the Wife of her Huſband. I had much rather diſappoint the Farmer, or any other Maſter, of his Man, than deſtroy the Marriage-Bed. Had I done that, I ſhould have deſerved the Curſe of the Wife; but my Endeavour was to deſerve the Curſe of no one, if I could any ways prevent it. I was obliged to be ſevere with theſe Men, becauſe I found them obſtinate: I ſaid to them very mildly at firſt, Gentlemen, you all told me you were not married, otherwiſe I would not have deſired the Favour of you; her Majeſty wants Men, and you are all fit Perſons to be recommended into her Service; therefore I would have you all go voluntarily along with us, and you ſhall be well uſed. With that they fell into a great Rage, and uſed very abuſive Words, ſaying, is this your Foot-ball Match? with a great Oath. I had tutored our Men before, in caſe they ſhould be reſolute. They were for getting out of the Room, but I prevented them, by locking the Door and putting the Key in my Pocket. Then I ſaid to our Men, Now, my Boys! Then we began Battle Royal. Every one of us had ſhort Sticks, and we rib-roaſted them pretty handſomly, till they were as cool as Lambs. For my Part, at that Time I had Spirits enough to beat any two of them, though I was but a Stripling; for, as I have often obſerved, it is not the Bulk of a Man that doth Execution. When we had ſatisfied them with Stripes, we called for another Gallon

Gallon of ſtrong Beer; we took it in at the Window, and drank round: Then I deſired them to be contented in their Stations, as the Queen's Sailors, and if any of their Genius's could arrive at any Thing better, they ſhould be encouraged. And likewiſe I deſired to know whether they would go Volunteers; for if they would, they ſhould be well uſed; if not, I would ſend for a Cart Rope, and tie them all together, when they would find a great deal of Difference: Therefore I adviſed them to conſider of it, for I was determined to do as I ſaid: And told them they ſhould be all taken as Priſoners; but if they were affable, a Hair of their Heads ſhould not be touched; and that they ſhould have all the Liberty that in Reaſon they could deſire; and that I would endeavour to make them complete Sailors, if they would follow my Directions; for that nothing ſhould be wanting, that accrued to my Knowledge, in ſerving them.

After a long Conference to this Effect, I had the good Fortune to prevail with them to be Volunteers, which gave me a great deal of Pleaſure; and inſtead of running from us, they brought ſeveral others along with them, and they were all very well reconciled to us, and returned to our Ship very merrily, where they were kindly received. Here I ſaid to them, My Boys! you will have no Reaſon to complain of the Officers, for they are very civil Men, and will encourage you, if you behave well; and I will be as good as my Word, in inſtructing of you. I then went down to the Captain's Ca-

bin,

bin, and told him all our Proceedings. He ſaid I was the luckieſt Man he had ever met with, and gave me an handſom Acknowledgment, deſiring I would keep it; but as I thought thoſe with me had as good a Right as my ſelf, I therefore diſtributed it amongſt them. They ſaid, Pray God bleſs the noble Captain! So he had their Prayer, though it was my Gift; but I had much rather their Regard ſhould be for their Officers than for myſelf, for from Something comes Something; but they could not expect any Thing from me but Advice, and that they were always welcome to. I never thought my Time idly ſpent in converſing with them, eſpecially if I could reform them; for I thought it a Duty incumbent on me to do ſo. The Officers were exceeding well pleaſed at our bringing ſo many clever young Men; and the Captain ſaid, As you have had ſuch good Succeſs in both theſe Places, I think it will be right to make the beſt of our Way to *Dublin*; for it is poſſible, that being ſo large a Place, you may get a brave Parcel together. I replied, Gentlemen, ſince it is your good Pleaſure to ſend me upon theſe Expeditions, I will do my utmoſt to ſerve my Queen and your Honours. Thereupon they gave Orders to weigh, and having a fair Wind, we were not long before we reached *Dublin*. When we came there, the Captain gave Orders for twenty Men to go on Shore to preſs more Men. When we got on Shore we divided ourſelves, leſt they ſhould have any Suſpicion of us. I knowing that Men had

had rather ſhun than meet a Preſs Gang, we divided into three Companies, and I ſaid to them, as they had approved of the Diviſion, I think we will go into the Town, and two Companies may go down to the Skirts; but we will go through the Middle of the Town, and by that Means we ſhall ſweep it clean, and then we ſhall meet together at the End. But there is ſomething more to be contrived, if we intend to do any Good here: I think it is proper that we ſhould go through the Town firſt, to endeavour to learn the Conſtitution of the People, and by ſo doing they will have no Suſpicion of us when we go through the ſecond Time. The Men agreed to my Propoſal, and ſaid they would be obſervant to any Thing that I ſhould think worth their while: I was glad they had ſuch a good Reſolution, and began to think we ſhould do ſomething more than our Officers expected, which put me in great Spirits. When we parted, I deſired they would not paſs an Ale-houſe without paying their Reſpects to the Landlords and taſting their Beer; becauſe that will be a Means, if any Thing ſhould happen, of having them on our Sides, which will be a great ſtrengthening to us: Therefore I would have you all be extremely civil to all you meet with. And, to carry on the Intrigue with Dexterity, you may ſigniſy to the People, that ſix of our Men and ſix others are to meet at two o' Clock this Afternoon, to play at Cudgels and Quarter-Staff, and that you are going to ſee the Town, and by

that Time they will be ready to begin. You muſt be all of one Speech, that they may have no Suſpicion of you; and perhaps ſome of them may deſire you to call upon them as you go back, and be ſure not to deny them, eſpecially if you think them fit for your Purpoſe. They anſwered me, that I needed not doubt their Care, for they would do to the utmoſt of their Ability; and I deſired them, if they ſaw any of us, not to take any Notice, but to proceed on their Buſineſs. When we parted, we were all in high Spirits, which I liked, as I was ſenſible no Good could be done, unleſs we had good Spirits to ſupport us; and I always obſerved, that there would never be any Good done if there was any Expoſtulation amongſt them; which made me think myſelf very lucky in having Men along with me that were of a placable Temper, though they would exert themſelves when required; which I think is ſufficient in any Man; for quarrelſom Perſons are not fit to be ſent on any Expedition whatſoever, for, inſtead of forwarding, they will hinder it, ſo that no ſort of Stratagem which can be invented will take. For theſe Sort of Men have no Notion of any Thing but Violence; and, for my Part, I always loved to make Men eaſy in their own Minds, before I would have any Thing to do with them; as you ſhall hear, after I have told you our Proceedings in Town. As we went up the Town, we ſaw ſeveral clever young Men playing at Chuck, Pitch, and Huſſel: We went forward and did not interrupt

terrupt their Diverſion; but ſome of our Men being willing to ſtand to ſee them play, therefore I ſaid to them, Don't ſtand to ſee theſe Children play at Chuck; with that ſome of them were offended, and replied in very vulgar Language, which I did not mind, as they could not offend me; therefore I told our Men, if they did not come, I would go without them, for if we did not make Haſte, we ſhould be too late to ſee the Cudgel Match. With that the young Men aſked where it was to be? I told them, that if they or any of their Acquaintance had a Mind to ſee the beſt Cudgel Match that ever was played by Men, we ſhould come back to this Place in about an Hour's Time, when we ſhall be glad of your Company, if any of you have an Inclination to go. They ſaid, they would go, if we would call. Then we went forward, but had not gone far before ſome of them ſaid, we hope you won't forget to call upon us. I told them, they might depend upon it. When we came to the Bridge, there was juſt going to be a Battle between two Men: I ran in the midſt, and ſaid, Gentlemen, I would have you forbear; for it is much better to make up your Grievances without Blows. They hearkened to me: but ſome of the Mob deſired to know, what Buſineſs I had with them? I took no Notice of their Words, but told the Men, thoſe were not their Friends who deſired them to fight in the Streets. With that they put on their Clothes; and I was glad to ſee that two or three of my Words had more Impreſſion

on them than all that the reſt could ſay. The Men deſired that I would go into a Houſe and drink with them, and thanked me for my Advice. I ſaid to them, Gentlemen, I ſaw your Inclinations were not for fighting, only the Mob wanted Diverſion, of which I was glad to diſappoint them; as I have often ſeen, through the Inſtigation of other Men, and that ſuch a Thing has been fatal. Therefore I would adviſe no Man to fight in the Streets, leſt Death ſhould befal him; which is often the Caſe where there are ſo many backward Friends to aſſiſt them. Then I ſaid to my Comrades, Come, we muſt think of going, or we ſhall not be Time enough to ſee the Cudgel Match, that is to be betwixt ſix Sailors and ſix others. And I told them, if they had a Mind to go, we would call on them in about half an Hour; and if they knew of any clever young Men, we might make a Bye-Match, for I loved Diverſion, but hated Barbarity, which was not agreeable to my Conſtitution. They deſired me not to exceed my Time, and they would wait till we came back, and we will ſend for two or three of our Acquaintance, that will go along with us. We parted, aud were very expeditious; for we ran over the other Part of the Town preſently. The People, ſeeing us in ſuch a Hurry, aſked what was the Matter? We told them that we had a Mind to ſee all that Part of the Town, before the Diverſion at the other began. They wanted to know what Diverſion; but I deſired they would ſtay till we returned, and we would inform

form them. As I desired, they did; and tarried till we came back. By Chance I saw a Parcel of our Men, and desired them to take no Notice of us, but go as fast as they could to the Field we had appointed, near the large Alehouse we had drank at; and when they came there, to strip ready, and when we came up, to seem very impatient that their Antagonists were not come to face them. They followed our Directions, and we carried on the Intrigue with great Dexterity. For our Parts, when we went back, five and twenty young Men followed our Company, and we were all in high Spirits, as we passed through the Streets; which occasioned us to increase our Number; and I said as we went along, Come, my Boys! the more the merrier; which caused the whole Town to be alarmed: So that I thought we should have more than we could tell what to do with; and I began to think that we must be very artful, to deceive so many; which set my Wits to work. I was at a stand for some Time, to think of Means for our Preservation, which I had Reason enough for, being environed with so many clever young Men: I was under no Apprehensions of Fear in Regard to myself, but for my Companions, as I had taken upon me to bear them harmless, if they would follow my Directions. So I had a great Charge upon me, but not greater than I was able to discharge. When we came near to the Place appointed, we perceived our Men and likewise some others along with them; they were stript, and as active

as ever I ſaw young Men, for they were practiſing with each other. When we came to them, they ſaid to us, Gentlemen, did you ſee on the Road any Men coming to meet us? We replied, that we neither ſaw nor heard of any. Bleſs me! ſaid one of them, we have been waiting here this Hour, in Expectation of their Company: I am afraid they will diſappoint us. You need not be afraid of that, ſaid I; if they have promiſed you, they will ſurely be as good as their Words; if not, we ſhall loſe the Diverſion that we came to ſee. The Men ſaid to us, Gentlemen, you ſhall not loſe your Labour, for if they don't come by half an Hour after Two, it was agreed on to ſpend ten Shillings, which they left for a Forfeit, and we left the ſame, which we will ſpend freely, and of which, Gentlemen, you are very welcome to partake. Our Landlord has got a large Ham and Buttock of Beef ſtuffed, which we ſhall be glad to entertain you with. I ſaid to the Company, Gentlemen, as the young Men are ſo civil as to offer this Favour, we had beſt to accept it; for I am certain, if a Man offers a Favour to any Perſon, he had much rather that they ſhould receive than refuſe it; for receiving it ſhews a Regard to the Beſtower: Therefore, Gentlemen, if you are willing, when the Time is expired, we will all go together; and when the Money is ſpent we will be our Sixpence a-piece: For as we came here to be merry, the People will laugh at us, if we go back otherwiſe; they will ſay, You have loſt your Spirits, as well

as your Diverſion; to prevent which you muſt do as I deſire, and what they ſay then will be but trifling. Gentlemen, my Nature is not to vex at Diſappointments, for I am ſenſible there is nothing but Diſappointments in this World; therefore, as this prejudices no one, I would not have you to be uneaſy, and think your Time ſpent idly: But as we came here to pleaſe our Eyes, do not let us go back without comforting our Hearts; and as we may be cheerful, I always prefer Mirth before any Thing elſe, and I do not queſtion but we ſhall be merry enough before we part. They complied, and we went into the Ale-houſe, but I gave my Men a Hint not to admit any into our Company, but thoſe that were fit for our Purpoſe, which they obſerved. We were provided with Rooms to entertain two Companies in, for as they came in, two of our Men ſtood ready to introduce them in two Diviſions. When we had almoſt filled our Rooms, two or three wanted to intrude in going into what Rooms they thought proper, which I perceiving, ſaid to them, Gentlemen, I am aſhamed at your Behaviour, as the young Men are ſo civil to treat you, you abuſe their good Nature, by intruding on them in this Manner; therefore I would have you to go into the other Room, and think yourſelves well dealt by; for you ought rather to thank them for their Civilities, then to create a Clamour and Diſturbance, as you may be certain, every Man that gives a Treat will chuſe his own Company: Therefore they went into the Room very orderly.

But the poor Men little thought that I belonged to them, for had they imagined it, my Words would not have made ſuch an Impreſſion on them.

Thus we had the good Fortune, to get all thoſe that were to our liking together; and it gave me a great deal of Pleaſure to ſee them all ſo well diſpoſed, and I began to think, that with a little Difficulty we might bring them into a Condition to do Buſineſs. I ordered ſomething for us to eat, and they brought the Buttock of Beef and Ham, which I thought would not be ſufficient to ſatisfy ſuch a Number as we were, therefore I deſired the Landlord to get us ſomething to reliſh our Drink, and he brought us ſome cold Beef Stake Pye, and ſome Bacon and Red Herrings, ſo out of one Thing or other we made Shift to ſatisfy them; and then for the Drinking, my Deſire was to make the oppoſite Party happy in their Liquor, and preſerve the young Men, ſo that they might be able to walk along with us; and I accompliſhed my Deſign in this Manner. I attended them with Liquor, and got them almoſt fuddled, and when their Senſes were not ſo briſk as uſual, I daſh'd their Liquor with Brandy to pin the Baſket, which I was not long about. After that was applied they were clamorous for ſome Time, but at laſt fell faſt aſleep; And I began to think their Appearance was like ſo many dead Bodies. I was very well pleaſed that I had accompliſhed ſo great a Work, ſo paying my Reckoning I went to the other Company, and told them that I had

I had juſt got all the others to Sleep. They were aſtoniſhed, and thought it impoſſible that I ſhould make them all fuddled, but to convince them I deſired they would go and ſee. Two or three went and came back ſaying, that there they lay like ſo many Pigs in a Stye. The poor young Men little thought of our Conſpiracy againſt them, neither did they know that I belonged to our Men, but thought that I lived at *Dublin*; wherefore I ſaid to them, Gentlemen, I think we are highly obliged to the Mariners for this Treat, but as they have been ſo civil, I think, we can do no leſs than be our Shilling a Piece before we go. They anſwered, we acknowledge their Civility has been more than we could expect, and will be any Thing that they ſhall deſire. Then my Comrades replied, Gentlemen, you will be all kindly welcome to as much more, if you will take part of it. I ſaid to them, I think we will ſtay a little longer, but I will not ſtay to be benighted; they approved of it, and ſaid with all their Hearts, and down we ſat, and were exceeding merry, when among other Diſcourſe I told them that I wanted to go to *England*, and that ſometimes a Ship going that Way would not be againſt giving one a Lift. Some of the Men ſaid we have often wiſhed to ſee *England*, but never could have an Opportunity of going thither, if you can inquire when any Ship goes we ſhall be glad to go along with you, for we like your Company and Converſation very well. I could not help being pleaſed to hear them expreſs themſelves

ſelves in that Manner, and ſaid to them, if you are in earneſt, I will make all the Enquiry I can; for if we have fair Weather we need not be gone above three or four Days, and as it is a Frolick, and we are all merry together, let us all go together. I do not love to ſatisfy all the World of my Proceedings, but if you have all a Mind to go along with me, I will bear your Charges. They thanked me for my kind Offer, and ſaid they would not refuſe it.

I thought the young Men were very affable in complying with every Thing that I propoſed, and thought myſelf bleſt above all Mankind to be able to make myſelf ſo agreeable to every body; and could not help thinking, that I had the moſt Luck of any Man in Life in ſucceeding in all my Enterpriſes for her Majeſty's Service; notwithſtanding I had the leaſt of any Body in Undertakings that were for myſelf, except it was Providence that guided me, which was my only Director and Support. I ſaid to the young Men, it is poſſible theſe Gentlemen Mariners may know of ſome Ship that is going that Way very ſoon. My Comrades replied, Gentlemen, as ſoon as the Wind is fair, we ſhall ſail for *Holyhead*, and we do not queſtion but that if you have a Mind to go, our Captain will not refuſe you your Paſſage; but it is uncertain when we ſhall ſet ſail, therefore, if you have a Mind to walk along with us, I believe you may be certain of your Paſſage. They were in a Conſternation for ſome Time, when I ſaid, I deſire you will determine at once, what you have

have a Mind to do, and I will be ready to wait on you, and take Care that you ſhall want for nothing in your Paſſage, ſo Gentlemen, it only depends upon your Reſolution, to ſay Yea, or Nay. They replied, they would go. Well, ſaid I, ſince your Reſolutions are to go, I will give you my Word and Honour to take care of you. I thought it was right to take them at their Words, leſt their Minds ſhould alter; ſo we paid our Reckoning, and went away immediately. I was in high Spirits to think that I had accompliſhed this Operation, which Thouſands would have thought morally impoſſible to do, as I had done, and but few would have invented ſuch Stratagems as I did, but I always thought that I could not do enough for the good of my Queen and Country; and as my Thoughts were ſo well inclined, nothing was a Fatigue to me, but as the Scripture ſaith, *my Yoke was eaſy, and Burthen was light*. And I was always ready by my Example, and otherwiſe, to reform the Populace from a bad Inclination to a loyal one.

When we came on board of our Ship, I deſired our Men not to take Notice that I belonged to them, 'till I had accompliſhed my Deſign; when I ſaid to the young Men I think it will be proper to go to the Captain and aſk him whether he is willing to give us our Paſſage: They agreed to leave it to me, to do as I thought proper. I went to the Captain and ſaid, Sir, I have brought you five and twenty Paſſengers, who all came with an Intent to go with me to *England*, they little think that I am a Mariner,

there-

therefore they have been very compliable to every Thing that I have propoſed hitherto; and I don't queſtion but that if your Honour will be ſo kind as to favour me with your Company, and ſpeak to me as if I was one of them, but you will bring them by Degrees all to be Voluntiers, which I think is much better than to ſurpriſe them at once; otherwiſe they will always bear me a Grudge, and ſay, that I have acted ſophiſtically with them. But Sir, I hope you will not give them that Provocation, and this is the only Way to prevent it, and I ſhall be bound to pray for you, if you will be pleaſed to grant my Requeſt. The Captain was very well pleaſed, and ſaid, *Biſhop*, I will do any Thing that is in my Power to ſerve you, and you may depend upon my coming amongſt you in order to make every Thing eaſy. I returned him a thouſand Thanks for his Civilities, and it was not long before he came to viſit us. The firſt Thing he ſaid was, young Men, where are you bound for? I anſwered, Sir, we came along with your Men, in order for to go to *England*; for theſe young Men have a great Fancy, but never had an Opportunity to go till now, therefore we ſhall be highly obliged to your Honour for our Paſſage. He replied, you are all welcome to your Paſſage, but I would not adviſe you to go, for you will all certainly be preſſed into the Land Service if you go there, for there is a very hot Preſs all over *England*, becauſe they want Men in *Flanders*: Though if you have a Mind to hazard yourſelves, I will conduct you ſafe, but am certain

tain it will prove as I ſay. Therefore if your Inclinations do not lead you to ſerve the Queen by Land, I would have you all to determine and ſerve her by Sea. The young Men were ſeemingly under great Concern, when I ſaid to them, well, what ſhall we do? As the noble Captain has given us our Choice do not let us be caſt down, but as we came in a Frolick let us ſupport it by going along with the Captain; I hope you are not under any Apprehenſions of Danger, if you are, you need not, for I do not think there is ſo much as People make for, therefore let us all be of one Mind, either to go or to continue with the Captain: For my Part, make it agreeable to yourſelves, it will be agreeable to me. Then they pulled up Courage and ſaid they would go along with the Captain; I was very glad to find them as conformable now as before, and the Captain was in Raptures to ſee them ſo well inclined, and that I had accompliſhed my Deſign. Then he deſired me to go with him into his Cabin, where he ſaid to me, *Biſhop*, thou art the greateſt Artiſt that ever was born, for to unite ſuch a Body of Men as theſe are. I cannot conceive your Genius. For it is miraculous and unconceiveable how you ſhould get ſo many Men, and the Lieutenant and Mate ſo few. Sir, ſaid I, that I have nothing to do with, but whenever I am ſent upon any Expedition, I always think it my Duty to do to the utmoſt of my Ability, and nothing could refrain me from acting; otherwiſe I ſhould not be able to anſwer for my Conduct,

and

and ashamed to look you in the Face; but I can give you an account of all my Proceedings during my Service, and you are not unacquainted with some of them, which you have judiciously observed. He then said, you must have something for the young Men to make merry with, and gave me two Gallons of Brandy, saying, if that is not enough you shall have more, and *Bishop*, for your Part you shall never want for any Thing while you are with me, and I shall always respect you for what you have done.

I would have the World think it is no small Thing to have the Commander's good Word; for a Captain is like a King at Sea, and his Authority is over all that are in his Possession. Therefore I would have all the Sailors to be mindful of their Duty, and that will be a Means to gain their Commander's good Word. I took leave of the Captain, and went with the two Gallons of Brandy to the young Men, and said, see here, my Boys, how good the noble Captain has been to us already, to give us this Brandy to make merry with. At the Sight of the Liquor they all began to revive, and drank to such an Excess as drown'd all Apprehensions of Fear or Danger: And they never after disliked a Mariner's Life, nor seemed to vex at their coming, but when the Morning appeared they were as merry as ever without the least Concern. Nor was there any Reflection thrown on any one, though it was through my Instigation. When the Captain got up he was glad to find us all in such high Spirits, and asked us how we liked

our

our Liquor? We returned him Thanks, that we liked it extremely well, and it enlivened our Hearts to ſuch a Degree, that we were capable of any Thing. The Captain then gave Orders for the young Men to obſerve how the Sailors did every Thing, and to learn their Buſineſs: They were very diligent, and in a ſhort Time were good Sailors; much better than thoſe that the Lieutenant and Mate got out of Hoys and Boats, for the greateſt Part of thoſe were ſtubborn obſtinate Men, thinking none ſo wiſe as themſelves, which I obſerved to be the Nature of thoſe ſort of Men, and that there is no breaking of them. Therefore I aver, that there is more Proſpect of a good Sailor from a Countryman, than from a Waterman, that pretends to know more than his Teachers. Which I always found to be a juſt Obſervation, but leave ſuch as have a Mind to diſpute it.

We weighed and were ordered to *Holyhead*, were we ſtaid but a ſhort Time, before we put to Sea again. We had not gone far before it blew exceeding hard, ſo that the Maſter thought proper to run her very much to Windward and on the Lee ſide we might have gone up to our Knees in Water. She had very high comings to the Hatches. Then there was a Signal to ſtand to the Lee Sheet, and the Wind being partly in our Teeth made it a long Sail to *Plymouth*. We put into *Hamouze*, where the Ship being ordered to be clean'd, I thought there was no more Buſineſs for me at Sea, therefore took the firſt Opportunity to ſpeak to the Captain, which I did

in this Manner. Sir, I have a Favour to beg, which if you will be pleaſed to grant, will highly oblige me. You know, Sir, my Behaviour hitherto, but if you pleaſe to give me leave I will inform you of my Inclinations. Sir, I am of a roving Nature; and ever ſince I heard of the Action that was performed on the *Danube* by the Duke of *Marlborough*, I promiſed to myſelf, in God's Name, that if nothing prevented I would go and aſſiſt the Duke, for ſo noble a General cannot have too many good Men; and as my Inclinations are already with him I hope your Honour will not deny me: There have been many Inſtances that our Enemies Defeat has been owing to the Succeſs of one Blow, and it may be my Fortune to ſtrike that lucky Blow; and if you pleaſe to releaſe me I am determined to ſtand to all Events, for I find there will be nothing more done at Sea, and I will go where I can be employed; for I have no other Deſire but to be of Service to my Queen and Country, and have no Ambition but to carry Arms, ſo that I may call myſelf a Man of War and an Arms Bearer. This is all I deſire, except Fortune favours me with ſomething, I will never purchaſe any Thing, and as Providence has ordered it, hitherto I have been a Victor, and do not queſtion but I ſhall remain ſo. Therefore, Sir, with your leave I will drink Succeſs to her Majeſty's Arms by Sea and Land. The Captain, replied, *Biſhop*, I cannot part from you ſo eaſily as from my Liquor; for when that is gone I can get more, but when you

are gone I ſhall never get ſuch another. Yet I cannot well refuſe you, and ſince we muſt part, pray God proſper all your Intentions; for I don't know any one in the Army that deſerves my Prayers preferable to yourſelf. Sir, ſaid I, I return your Honour Thanks for all your Civilities to me, and hope that your Honour may find thouſands and ten thouſands as good Men as myſelf, or elſe we ſhall be at a very great Loſs if the War continues; as there is no other likelyhood but it will by Land. He left me and I believe the Gentleman had a great Regard for me: For he often ſaid he would do ſomething for me the firſt Opportunity. But at that Time I had no Thoughts of Preferment, and only a ſtrong Deſire to humble our Enemies, which was all my Ambition aimed at. And what is more commendable than to face our Enemies like Lions, which ſtrikes ſuch a Terror as renders them unfit to hold up a Muſket againſt us, and their Spirits to fail them ſo much that they are like Men ſtruck with a Palſey? Oh! *Britain*, it is all owing to thy Fame, and thy Name I will always help to ſupport.

CHAP. VIII.

The Author leaves the Sea Service: Marries a Wife: Settles his Family Affairs, and reſolves to try the Land Service.

IT was not long before the Captain came again to me, and ſaid, *Biſhop*, as you are determined to leave this Service, when do you

intend to enter into the Land Service? Sir, ſaid I, as ſoon as your Honour is pleaſed to give me my Diſcharge, I intend to go ſee my Friends and Relations, and then leave them again to condole for me, when I ſhall enter myſelf in the Land Service: For it is my Reſolution that nothing ſhall reſtrain me from acting in every Particular as I have informed your Honour. *Biſhop*, replied he, I don't doubt your Sincerity in the leaſt, for I am ſenſible that it is not in your Nature to do an ill Thing; therefore I will give you your Diſcharge, and you may go as ſoon as you pleaſe. Sir, ſaid I, I return your Honour a thouſand Thanks, I will juſt take leave of my Comrades, and then I purpoſe to go in God's Name: For hitherto I have had my Protection from him, and may it be his bleſſed Will ever to remain with me; for through him we gain the Victory, and without him we are not able to think a good Thought. *Biſhop*, ſaid he, it is very right, we are uncapable of doing any thing that is good without his Aſſiſtance.

We parted and I went to take Leave of all belonging to the Ship. They were extremely ſorry to find I was going to leave them; particularly the two poor Men whoſe Lives I was ſo inſtrumental in ſaving, when they had the Accident to fall into the Sea; they remembered it and cried exceſſively, and ſaid there is not a Man in the World we have ſuch a Regard for as you. I gave them ſome ſmall Acknowledgment, and left them with Tears in their Eyes.

I ſet out pleaſing myſelf with the Thoughts of being able to give my Friends and Relations an Account of my Adventures, and how I ſhould ſurpriſe them at my Appearance, as they had not ſeen me for ſeven Years. I might have ſeen them ſooner but I was apprehenſive that they might poſſibly detain me by their Perſuaſions. Therefore, I thought proper only to write to them, and as I had diſobeyed my Parents at my firſt ſetting out, I thought it prudent not to be too often guilty of the ſame Fault. Therefore, they were obliged to be contented with my Abſence, though they thought it hard as I was their only Son; and ſo much the more, as there was a little Eſtate depending, that after our Deceaſe would go into another Family. My Father often implored me, but nothing would reſtrain me from acting according to my own Inclinations. Therefore I left him to deplore for me, which I found he did; for when I came to my Mother, ſhe told me it had been the Occaſion of his Death. As I found this was through my Proceedings, it put me in great Torture, when I came to reflect with myſelf, that he ſhould be the only one to whom I rendered Ingratitude for Love. And it put me very much out of order to think, that I ſhould be kind to all the World and neglect my dear Father.

When I grew better I informed my Mother, that I had an Inclination to go ſee my Uncle in *Kent*; though I had other Reaſons: For I had an old Sweetheart at *Chatham* whom I wanted to ſee. My Mother was very unwilling to part

with me so soon, and said to me, my dear Child I thought you was come to continue with me; for I have no Pleasure in the World now your Father is dead; therefore I proposed to have some in you, as you are come home alive, but I find you will bereave me of all. Her tender Expressions and the word Father cut me to the Heart, and no one can imagine the Torture I endured. It was then I found that I was of two Natures, having degenerated from a Heart like a Lion to a melting Heart. I strove to hide my Grief from my Mother by going into *Kent*, and she shed thousands of Tears for me at parting; but I comforted her as well as I could by telling her I should return in a Week or Fortnight's Time. When I had taken Leave of her I made the best of my Way to *Chatham*, and between Pleasure and Pain I scarce felt the Ground I walked on; for I was but two Days in going from *Deddington* in *Oxfordshire*, to *Chatham* in *Kent*. I had a great regard for the Person whom I made my Wife in a Day or two after my Arrival there. Therefore, as she possessed one part of my Heart and Grief the other, I was so supported that I was not in the least Leg-weary; and as I thought it was most prudent to overcome Grief with Pleasure, I think that I took the propereſt Method of any in the World by taking a Wife; but there was not a little Vexation attended it, as you shall hear.

I married *Sarah Dickers* Daughter to *John Dickers*, who was brought up by her Grandfather *James Jackman*, she was a Woman that was very

very well educated, and I had a Fortune with her ſuitable to her Education: She had ſeveral other good Perfections, and her Converſation and good Nature were amiable, and ſhe had my Soul's Affection. And I think ſhe was endued with a Gift more than any of her Sex, which was Patience; therefore I thought myſelf bleſſed above all Mankind in a Wife, for there was not a Spot nor a Blemiſh in her that I could perceive. We had been married but two Days before the Grandfather heard of it: Then he fell into a great Rage, and ſaid to my Wife, as ſhe told me, ſo Madam you are married, are ye? and be d—d. Well you ſhall continue no longer under my Roof, with that he puſhed her out of Doors. She came crying to me, and ſaid, ſhe thought her Grandfather would go mad about it; and that ſhe did not think he could be guilty of ſuch Animoſity, for ſhe always thought him to be a good natured Man; for when he returned from walking he always aſked for his dear Child with much Tenderneſs: but I found that he was changed from Clemency to be full of Clamour. Therefore I told my Wife I would conſider againſt next Morning how to proceed; I had but little Sleep all Night, and as ſoon as Day break I thought proper to have ſome Diſcourſe with my Wife. We talked the Matter over for about three Hours, and at laſt agreed to go together to the old Man; and to behave in as humble a Manner as poſſibly we could. When we came thither my Wife fell down on her Knees and ſaid, pray dear

Grand Papa forgive me, but this is my Huſband. The old Man looked with Exuberance of Spite in his Face. I ſaid to him, Sir, with humble Submiſſion, I beg you will hear me, I mean to do nothing but with Honour and Juſtice to all the World, and as I am married to your Granddaughter I am bound in Juſtice to take care of her, and there is a Duty incumbent on me with regard to you, which I ſhall always obſerve. Sir, I flatter no Man, neither will I deceive any Man or Woman in the World by fabulous Stories, but all my Proceedings will be Facts, and you will find me a true Friend to her: Therefore, if you did purpoſe any Favours I beg they may be no farther off. As I obſerved before, I ſaw his Paſſion broiling in him with Exuberance of Spite, and he expreſſed himſelf in ſuch a Manner, as would have made any one tremble to hear ſuch Expreſſions come out of an old Man's Mouth. He ſwore by all that was Good he would deſtroy us both; and in a violent Rage ran into the Parlour. I apprehended he had ſomething more in his Head than was good and ran after him, when he had juſt charged a Gun with a brace of Balls, and had primed it. And juſt as I appeared was going to fire at me; but I was active and jumped upon him, took it out of his Hand and preſerved my Life and his too. I had a great Notion that ſomebody had prepoſſeſſed him with ſome falſe Aſperſions of me. Therefore I ſaid to him, Sir, this is not through your own Nature, but through the Inſtigation of others, that have put you in this Paſſion, and

I hope

I hope you will ſtrive to quench thoſe Flames that are burning in your Breaſt, and not give way to thoſe that will deceive you. How could you propoſe to lift up Arms againſt a Man whoſe Profeſſion it has been theſe ſeven Years ſucceſſively? Were it in ſome Men's Power they would bereave you of your Life; but I take no Advantage of any Man, and though you was guilty of Inhumanity I ſhall not be guilty of the ſame. But I will maintain my Right, and beg you will ſit down while my Wife and your Servant fetches all the Things that belong to her down into this Room, and nothing more. But every Thing that is hers I inſiſt on. Therefore my Dear, be not guilty of any Injuſtice, by taking any Thing more than what you can juſtly call your own; for though he has acted barbarouſly by me, I deſire nothing more than to do him Juſtice; and am ſorry I am obliged to exert myſelf in this Manner to the old Man, though I am drove to it for my own Preſervation and Safety.

When my Wife had brought down all her Things according to my Deſire, I took an Inventory of them and laid them all before the old Man, that he might ſee there was nothing but what was hers. I opened a Scrutore and found ſome Writings; I juſt looked at them and found that they were right. I could not help ſmiling, and ſaid to the old Man, Sir, I find my Wife has received ſome Favours from you, which I acknowledge is very conſiderable, and I will do my Endeavour to make ſome Returns of

Gratitude, if you think I am deſerving and uſe me as ſuch, otherwiſe the Obligation is void, and I do not think I am obliged to you in the leaſt, becauſe you think me unworthy of the Bleſſing of God Almighty, even of that which is as dear to me as my own Soul. He was not ſatisfied, but fled in a violent Rage, and ſaid he would be the Death of us if ever we entred his Gates again. Therefore I thought it prudent to ſtay and ſecure all that belonged to us, while we might: For I found the Thoughts of Money cut him to the Heart. When we had done every Thing effectually, I ſaid to the old Man, *Sir, I hope you won't grudge me what I have got as I have ventured my own Life to preſerve yours; and if you pleaſe to reflect, you will find I am deſerving of every individual Thing.* Though I treated him ſo gently, yet his unruly Spirit could not get the better of his Paſſion; ſo I was obliged to leave him in Flames. Before we parted he was for having the Gun again; but I told him, *Sir, as for the Gun, I purpoſe to keep it; to try whether I cannot guard my Wife and Money better than you did.* This irritated him to ſuch a Degree, I thought he would have gone mad. However I received it all as calm as a Lamb, thinking by that Means to pacify him. But as I found nothing would do, I thought it beſt to leave him to himſelf, and the Words we ſpoke at parting were prettily made out by my Wife. I ſaid, *This is a mournful parting Day.* She, *farewel Grand Papa, I ſay.* Which was all was ſaid at parting.

The

The old Man bore a continual Hatred to me, and I became his utter Averſion. I obſerved that the Nature of Mankind is almoſt like a Fiſh. As they ſwallow the Bait with ſuch Eagerneſs, as to be glad to diſgorge it again; ſo Men will run to Exceſs till they find the Effect of their Paſſion, and then would be glad to be compliable. Though it often proves their Ruin before they are aware of the Event, as it certainly would have been of him, had not I had the Courage to diſarm him to prevent the Effects of his Ire. And if he were to reflect, I do not queſtion but he would thankfully acknowlege it. But inſtead thereof, at the time he grew more inveterate againſt me. Not that I went near him: For I only enquired of his Neighbours, and could not help pleaſing myſelf with the Thoughts of what a Change there would be in him, when my Uncle and he ſhould come together; as I was ſenſible after ſome Conference together, all Grievances would be made up, he would draw in his Horns, and be aſhamed of his Proceedings. But by concealing this in my own Breaſt, I terrified the old Man, and found out his Nature and Diſpoſition, which were very extraordinary. For he made a ſhocking Appearance when in thoſe Flames of Paſſion, and I have often ſaid, could a Man but ſee himſelf at that Time he never would be guilty of the like again.

Though he envied me ſo much, yet nothing could induce me to make myſelf known. Though my Wife was very uneaſy, fearing that

he would take ſome Opportunity to do me a private Miſchief. Therefore ſhe ſaid to me, my Dear, *I wiſh you would contrive ſome Way to make him eaſy.* I replied, *my Dear Child, I beg of you not to make yourſelf uneaſy, for it is not in my Power at preſent. But I hope in a little Time to be able to bring things to bear. I will do to the utmoſt of my Ability, and do not queſtion but to eſtabliſh Union, Peace, and Concord between us; though I love to ſee a Man ſweat his Paſſion out before I execute my Deſign, and you are ſenſible he has been guilty of a great many Execrations on my account; but I am certain you will find a great Change in him for the better, when I have accompliſhed my Deſign. As I always had a good Heart and my Intentions were good, I never feared Succeſs in any of my Undertakings. For that Man or Woman is not born, that I cannot make myſelf agreeable to by ſome Means or other; and inſtead of this Exuberancy of Spite againſt me he will be ſtruck with Extaſy and Raptures.* My Wife ſaid, *ſhe ſhould be glad to ſee it, for ſhe believed it was in no one's Power to turn his Heart, to one that he had once taken Antipathy againſt: For he was obſtinate in his own Opinion, and thought none ſo wiſe as himſelf.* My Dear, ſaid I, *I find by your Talk, that he has not one good Qualification belonging to him, and though he has not I am not afraid of accompliſhing my Deſign; for the greater his Cruelty the greater my Merit will be, and then I may ſay to myſelf there is nothing impoſſible for Man where there is Aſſiſtance from God.* And

I may

I may very well ſay it now, as I have waded through a multitude of Difficulties though I found nothing impracticable; therefore I will ſay with the Scripture, " As the Lord is on my " Side, I need not fear what Man can do unto " me." For though they may be artful in laying Plots and Schemes, yet nothing will ſucceed without the providential Power of God. And I hope no one will contradict me in this; for if they ſhould they muſt be under a Cloud of Darkneſs, which is often the Caſe where Obſtinacy and Ignorance meet together. When I had made theſe Reflections, my Wife obſerved to me thus: My Dear, *I hope you will excuſe me, but I am very impatient to know how you propoſe to bring yourſelf into his Favour? I am afraid you will find it a hard Taſk as he is ſo moroſe.* My Dear, I replied, *I thank your Sincerity, but I do not doubt Succeſs in the leaſt. But you muſt excuſe my begging of you never to be impatient to know my Affairs, till I think proper to make them known to you.* Nevertheleſs ſhe continued in the ſame Diſpoſition, continually urging me to tell her, till I poſitively informed her that I would not; and as ſhe knew me to be a Man of my Word, ſhe deſiſted importuning me. As I found my Anſwer gave her a great deal of Diſpleaſure, and I was inwardly grieved to ſee her vex at it; I could not help ſaying to her. My Dear, *I cannot help not telling you for my Word's ſake, and you may remember that I have kept it in every Thing I have propoſed to you.* She ſaid, *I acknowledge it, and that you*

have

have acted ſincerely in every Reſpect. But as for this I did not think it material, for had I apprehended that it would in the leaſt have offended you, I would not have deſired to have known any of your Secrets upon any Conſideration whatſoever, and therefore beg your Pardon. Her ſoft Expreſſions raviſh'd my Soul, and gave me a great Idea of Happineſs in her; but I could not in Honour break my former Reſolutions, although I had ſuch a Proſpect of Happineſs before my Eyes as would have been inevitable, had I been bleſſed with a Continuance with her. I then began to reflect with myſelf in this Manner. What is Man if he does not ſtand to his Reſolutions? Even he is no Man if he does not fulfill his own Propoſals, let the Event be what it will, and leave the Darling of his Heart, and all that is dear to him in this World to help to ſupport a good Cauſe, even this juſt and neceſſary War. I had theſe Reflections in the Preſence of my Wife, but concealed them; for ſhe little thought of my Intentions, neither can any one expreſs the Pain I endured at the Thoughts of leaving my Comforter. Theſe Thoughts were daily revived till I got the better of my Paſſion, when I thought fit to reveal it to my Wife. But before that, I did my Endeavour to make things eaſy with regard to the old Man, which I brought about in this Manner: I ſent the following Letter to my Uncle.

SIR,

SIR,

I AM married to a Grand-Daughter of Mr. *Jakeman*, which has created a great deal of Contention, through the want of a Knowledge of me, as I am a Man that does not love to make myſelf known to the World: But as I find it is neceſſary in an Affair of ſo weighty a Concern, that they ſhould have ſome Knowledge of me, I therefore pitch upon you, to concert with the old Man; as I know you are one of his Particulars, and have more Influence over him than any one I know: Therefore, I think you are the only Perſon to make up Grievances, which often ariſes between us. As Neceſſity obliges me to inform you of it, I hope you will admit it indiſpenſable; for I ſhall be ſorry to be diſappointed, though I was always confident you would never deceive me, and this will be a greater Obligation than ever, which, as is my Duty, I ſhall ever acknowledge, with the Returns of Friendſhip as in Duty bound,

From your affectionate Nephew,

Matthew Biſhop.

P. S. I beg you will not take Notice of what I have obſerved to you when you ſee him, though when you have ſpoke in favour of me, and have had ſome Confabulation with him, you may, if you think proper, deſire to ſee me, and then you muſt own me in Courſe, though in great Surpriſe. And as I do not doubt but the old Man will acquaint you with all his Proceedings,

ceedings, I am ſure you will be under great Concern at them, and will ſay he has acted with Inhumanity. As I have waded through Fire and Water to ſerve my Queen and Country, and when I come home to make me Amends, he puts my Life in Danger, it ſhocks me to think of his Ingratitude; but ſince it is ſo I will fulfil my Reſolutions, and go plant myſelf once more before my Enemies.

When I had ſent this Letter to my Uncle, I could not help being very uneaſy to ſee or hear from him; therefore I went and walked along the Road on purpoſe to meet him: But was full of perplexing Thoughts fearing the Letter might miſcarry. As I was in this Conſternation he came galloping along. I was very glad to ſee him and told him I began to be very impatient. He aſſured me that as ſoon as ever he received my Letter he made all the Haſte poſſible, and was as impatient as I was, knowing the old Man to be of a very odd Temper, and fearing he might do me a Miſchief by ſome Means or other. Therefore to prevent farther Diſputes, he made all the haſte poſſibly he could for my Preſervation. I thought it my Duty to render him Thanks for his being ſo expeditious. He told me he would readily go a thouſand Miles to ſerve me for my Father's ſake, for he had more regard for him than for any Man in the World, and for whoſe Sake he ſhould always reſpect me. Beſides he was glad to hear I was married to a Woman of ſuch Accompliſhments,

and,

and, said he, *I believe the old Man has settled something on her, besides what her Father left her, which will be a very considerable Fortune, and with the Estate your Father left you at his Death, you may live as happy as a King. Therefore I would have you be conformable, and not think of any more Frolicks, as you have been so lucky as to escape all Dangers you have been in; but think, that as Providence has protected you hitherto, if you are obstinate, and run wilfully into the Jaws of Death, you must not expect to escape. And pray Cousin, as the Almighty has been so favourable, do not press too much upon his Goodness, lest by so doing you should offend him, and consider, that as he is the only Arm of Defence in War, that if he does not give a Blessing to your Undertakings, you must expect to fall as you have seen Thousands.*

To this Discourse of his, I replied, Sir, *I return you a thousand Thanks, for the tender regard I find you have for me; but as God's providential Power has been over me hitherto, I never will despair of his Goodness: As he has conducted me and brought me through Fire, Sword, and Famine, from tempestuous Storms and the raging of the Seas, after all this Goodness, shall I say I have done enough? No, it behoves me to act to the utmost of my Ability, to help to support a good Cause. And as he has led me along with a fatherly Hand, why should I relinquish his Benevolence? No, that is not my Nature, for his Goodness I will return my Benediction, and do what I am able, till the Almighty think fit to make*

an

an Alteration. I may be inſtrumental in the preſerving of Thouſands; while I am thus inclined, why ſhould any one endeavour to turn my Heart? But I defy all the World to do it as it is ſo ſtedfaſtly fixt. Couſin, replied he, *I find you are the ſame Man as ever, and have as great Reſolution; I wiſh it had been fix'd on ſomething more agreeable to your Friends. But ſince it is otherwiſe we muſt be contented.* Sir, ſaid I, *I will declare my Sentiments freely to you, but hope you will not reveal them. My Inclination is fully bent on going to* Flanders, *as ſoon as the old Man is pacified, and every Thing is ſettled, and then I purpoſe to leave all my Income between my Wife and Mother, which will make them very happy in my Abſence; for I cannot ſettle while there is any Thing to be done abroad. The Thoughts of it are never out of my Head Day or Night; which makes me unfit for any Thing elſe. Therefore I think it beſt to be where my Thoughts are. I am the more impatient to have this Affair ſettled becauſe I am loſing Time; therefore beg it may be made an End of this Day if poſſible. Dear Couſin,* ſaid he, *ſince you are determined to go I will endeavour all that I can to bring the old Man to comply with what may be agreeable to you and your Wife. Sir,* I replied, *I deſire nothing more than to have Union amongſt us; till then I cannot reſt, neither can I leave them at Variance; but I beg you will not let any one know my Intentions, till I have accompliſh'd all my Deſigns; which when I have executed I care not who knows them.* He told me, he would take all the

the Care poſſible. *Sir*, I replied, *I do not doubt your Care, but Mankind cannot be too cautious, where ſuch a croſs-grain'd Piece of Stuff is concerned; therefore one ſhould ponder with inward Conſultations, to be able to weigh him to a Hair, and as I am ſenſible you can do it to a Nicety, I rely entirely on you.* We had all this Diſcourſe on the Road, which gave me much Satisfaction.

We parted; he went directly to the old Man, and I home to my Wife, very well pleaſed with the Thoughts that my Adventures might turn out to Advantage; but more, with the Thoughts of taking my Pleaſure abroad, which was the Thing I wanted. My Wife perceived that I was lifted up, and much delighted with ſomething; and ſaid to me, *My Dear, I am glad to ſee you in ſuch Spirits, and find ſomething has pleaſed you ſince you have been out.* I ſaid to her, *if any one aſks for me I will ſee them; therefore deſire you not to deny me; for I expect a Gentleman this Day to call on me, and through him I am in Hopes of making up the Difference that is between the old Man and us, which, my Dear, I am ſenſible you will be pleaſed with; therefore you ſhall drink a Bumper of Wine to our good Succeſs. Though I do not Queſtion it,* ſaid ſhe, *yet I fear I ſhall not find it ſo eaſy as you imagine. But ſhe was very well pleaſed.* When we had dined and drank our Glaſs, a Meſſenger came from the old Man's, and ſaid to me, *Sir, there is a Gentleman with my Maſter deſires to ſee you at our Houſe.* I ſaid to him, *Pray give my Service to the Gentleman, and de-*

ſire him to excuſe me coming there; as your Maſter has forbidden me ever coming under his Roof, I think it will not be prudent to be forbidden a ſecond Time; but ſhall be glad to ſee the Gentleman here or where he ſhall appoint elſe, but there, tell him I poſitively cannot come. The Servant went Home and delivered his Meſſage very punctually, and was not long before he returned with the Gentleman with him. In the mean Time I told my Wife, I thought it would be much better to be ſeemingly backward of going; for otherwiſe the old Man would think I knew of his coming. While my Wife and I were diſcourſing, the Servant brought my Uncle to the Door. And as the Servant came along with him, I thought it would be right to ſeem ſomewhat ſurpriſed. Therefore ſaid, it is my Uncle! O Uncle! I am overjoyed to ſee you, how came you in this part of the World? Which the Servant hearing ran home to his Maſter, and told him. In the mean while my Uncle told me what had paſſed between them, which was as follows. 'As ſoon, ſaid he, as I entred the 'Houſe the old Man ſaid, Mr. *Nicholls*, I am 'heartily glad to ſee you, I thought I ſhould 'never have the Pleaſure of ſeeing you more. 'Sir, ſaid I, I hope you are well, and Miſs 'your Grand-daughter, where is ſhe pray?' 'Oh! Mr. *Nicholls*, it is not much matter where 'ſhe is, for ſhe has turned out a very undutiful 'Child; after ſo much Trouble as I have had 'in giving her Education to make her a com-'plete Gentlewoman, after all, ſhe has been

'ſo

'so ungrateful, as to throw herself away upon 'the Lord knows who. Had I not done what 'I have and cannot recal it, it would not have 'vexed me; but the Thoughts of throwing 500*l.* 'away, I believe I shall run distracted. 'Sir, I replied, 'do you know nothing of the Man?' He answered, 'No more than that he is a Ma-'riner, and has the Appearance of a very wild 'young Fellow. When I saw him last, it vex-'ed me to that Degree, that I was just going 'to shoot him, if he had not prevented me by 'taking the Gun out of my Hands, and then 'he told me he would guard my Grand-daugh-'ter and Money better than I had done, and 'bid me Defiance; which enraged me so much 'that had I had any Thing in my Hand, I 'should certainly have bereaved him of his 'Life, and should he ever come near me I can-'not avoid doing him a Mischief; for the very 'Thought of him puts me in Flames, much 'more the Sight. He had the most Pertness 'as ever you knew a young Man in your Life, 'and such a Fluency of Speech that every Word 'he spoke cut me to the Heart; so that I was 'not able to contain myself. 'Sir, said I, par-'don me, but if I may give my Opinion I 'think you exert yourself too much in this 'Thing, and should endeavour to moderate 'your Passion, as there is no Necessity for it. 'I do not find the young Man has given you 'any Abuse, or used you ill in any respect; 'then why should you be so invidious against

'him without any Provocation.' He ſaid, 'Oh 'Mr. *Nicholls*, I think I have had Provocation 'enough to make me worſe than I am.' 'No, I replied, 'I cannot think ſo; a Man may be 'vexed for a Seaſon, but that is no reaſon why 'he ſhould harbour Inveteracy; for nothing 'ſhews a Man's Wickedneſs more than to carry 'his Reſentment too far. Let there be a Me-'diation; and ſuffer me to be his Mediator in 'ſpeaking my Sentiments, which I ſhall do 'freely. I verily believe the young Man is in-'wardly good. For there are but few in the 'World, that had they but half as much ſaid 'to them, or done to them what you have 'been guilty of, but would have attempted 'ſomething againſt you to have done themſelves 'Juſtice. And I obſerved to him, that you 'might have done ſomething very prejudicial 'to him, had you been as raſh as himſelf; and 'that you muſt have had the Patience of *Job*, 'or you could not have bore what you did. 'Therefore, ſaid I, as he has taken all patient-'ly hitherto, you can do no leſs than be re-'conciled to him. For if you reflect with 'yourſelf, you will find the young Man to be 'your Friend, rather than your Enemy: Eſpe-'cially as you have given him all the room 'imaginable to do you an Injury. And his 'not taking hold either of your Words or Ac-'tions, ſhews he is a Man of a good Conduct 'and amicable Diſpoſition. What can you de-'ſire more, than a Man endued with ſuch good

'Qualifications?

'Qualifications? Do not be unreaſonable and 'deſire Impoſſibilities; and, ſince the Knot is 'tied, do not harbour an ill Opinion of the 'Man; for it behoves all Mankind to defend 'themſelves to the beſt of their Power. And 'ſince the new married Couple are come toge-'ther, I would adviſe you to think it was or-'dained by Providence ſo to be, which is im-'poſſible to arm againſt, neither would it be 'prudent to endeavour it; for it would be 'bidding Defiance to the Almighty, making 'them unhappy, and bringing Deſtruction on 'yourſelf. Therefore I intreat you to be re-'conciled, by which you will find Comfort 'and make them happy; otherwiſe you will all 'be miſerable. Now I have told you the Con-'ſequence of carrying your Reſentment too far, 'I hope you will reflect upon it, and am con-'vinced you will find it as I ſay. For it is often 'ſeen, that Mankind would be glad to reform 'their Follies, when their Eyes are open and 'paſt Time to be recalled. The married Cou-'ple, after your ill Uſage, may run themſelves 'into Errors impoſſible to be retrieved. But I do 'not doubt your coming into my Meaſures, as 'you muſt be convinced in your own Mind, that 'what I have ſpoke in this Affair, was no other 'than giving you friendly Advice againſt your 'own Deſtruction, Not as I apprehend you want 'for Knowledge; but you are ſenſible we are all 'of us ſuch Creatures, that we are blind to our 'own Follies though we can perceive thoſe of 'others. Therefore ſometimes to reprimand

'each other is very neceſſary and beneficial, 'eſpecially when the unruly Spirit is upon us. 'What do you ſay, Mr. *Jakeman?* Is it not ſo?' He replied, 'Mr. *Nicholls*, you ſpeak very 'right: But there is one Thing I muſt beg of 'you to explain. You told me that the young 'Man had it in his Power to deſtroy me and 'my Subſtance; and I deſire to know what 'you mean by it? 'Well then, ſaid I, I will 'explain it freely to you, though you are con-'fuſed; which, I hope, will bring you into my 'Way of Thinking. You remember that 'you treated this young Man inhumanly, by 'preſenting your Gun at him; but finding you 'were prevented of your vicious Intent, you 'threatned by ſome Means or other to take 'away his Life. Do you not think it was bar-'barous Uſage? As for my Part, I ſhould not 'have thought it to have been in your Nature, 'had not you told it me yourſelf: And was he 'to ſeek for Juſtice, the Law would condemn 'you from your own Words. But as I do not 'find that he deſires any Revenge, it ſhews he 'has a great Regard for your Perſon, and much 'Wiſdom in imputing it to your Paſſion, 'though I find you are invidious againſt him; 'which I think is abominable, as he wiſhes you 'no Harm, and would, I dare ſay, do you all 'the Service he could, was you but reconciled 'to him; which I intreat you to be. 'Sir, ſaid 'he, what would you have me do? It made 'me almoſt mad, ſo that I did not know either 'what I ſaid or did. 'Sir, I replied, you need

'not

'not flatter yourself so, for I really think you 'were quite mad, as no one in their Senses 'would have acted in the Manner you did.' 'Mr. *Nicholls*, said he, you are very sharp 'upon me.' 'Sir, I replied, you give me Oc-'casion: I would endeavour to assist any one 'in a good Cause; but when their unruly Pas-'sions overcome their Senses, I think it high 'Time to give them up. For when they 'chuse the Father of Evils to be their Advo-'cate, I think it spending my Time in vain, 'which I do not chuse to do.' He desired me not to take any Notice of what had passed between us to any one; and as I found he was conscious of his Fault, I gave him my Honour upon it, that nothing I should say in this Affair should be any ways prejudicial to him.' 'Sir, said he, 'I can believe you; and would trust 'even my Life in your Hands for Safety, as I 'am confident you will never deceive me; and 'in this Affair I shall always acknowledge the 'Favour you have done me, and be bound 'to pray for you during Life.' 'Sir, said I, 'now you begin to talk reasonably, one may 'discourse with you; for as I knew you to be 'a Man of good Understanding, I was surpriz-'ed at your Actions; but since you are pacified, 'we will consult about this Affair, and if I can 'be of any Service to you, you may depend on 'it; but I would have you determine with 'yourself what you would have done.' He said he did not know what could be done in it. I answered, 'As I knew how it was with him,

'that if he had given your Wife the Writings 'into her own Hands, it would be impoſſible 'to recover them, unleſs it was clandeſtinely; 'but as they were a free Gift, I would not ad- 'viſe him to any ſuch Revenge; for though it is 'ſaid to be ſweet in ſome Things, yet in that he 'would find it bitter as Gall. And as you are 'old, I would adviſe you to chuſe what is moſt 'palatable, as you have bore a good Character 'hitherto, not to part from the World in Ma- 'lice. For what a fine Thing will it be, to have 'it ſaid, (when your Time comes) that you 'parted from the World in Peace? And this 'Method will be more conſiſtent, than to la- 'bour after what you cannot carry with you. 'For upon Reflection you will find, that Riches 'will have no Share in ſaving the Soul; but 'thoſe will be happy whoſe *Conſciences are void 'of Offence towards God and Man.* And now 'I have given you the beſt Advice I can, though 'it is in your Option whether you will be can- 'did enough to follow it. But, whether you 'are or not, I dare ſay there is nothing you can 'do ſo well.' He replied, 'Mr. *Nicholls*, ſince 'it is ſo, I am determined upon a general Re- 'conciliation, eſpecially as to my Grand-daugh- 'ter, whom I always adored, and gave my Ad- 'monition to, though ſhe did not regard it; 'neither do I think young Women are capable 'of receiving Inſtructions; but I ſhall impute 'it to her Weakneſs and his Cunning, and think 'no more of it.' 'Well, Sir, ſaid I, if ſo, and 'you will give me Leave, I will ſend for the

'young

'young Man hither, and hear what he has to 'say for himself.' He replied, 'With all his 'Heart; and ordered his Man to fetch you, 'but you did not think proper to come. But at 'his Return, I said I would go talk with you 'at your own House, and he sent the Servant 'to conduct me to you.' My Uncle had just finished this Account of their Discourse, when the old Man entered; for the Servant having run home and told him what he had seen and heard, the old Man thought he could not walk fast enough, therefore ordered him to put the Horses to the Chaise, and drive as fast as he could.

When he came in, he behaved in such an amicable delectable Manner, that I was quite surprised; for it is impossible to imagine the Change there was in him. He went to my Wife, and embraced her with Raptures, and came and shook me kindly by the Hand, and then gave us his Blessing, hoping that we should live comfortably and happily together. We thanked him, and I said to my Uncle, *You have overcome Evil with Good.* The old Man apprehended my Meaning, and replied, 'That if he 'had had but the least Apprehension of my be-'ing his Relation, he would have received me 'kindly at first; and desired us both to forgive 'his ill Usage, and hoped he should be able to 'make us Amends.' I answered him, 'Sir, since 'it is no worse, I freely forgive you; though, 'had you shot me, all that you have in the 'World would not have been a sufficient Atone-

'ment

'ment for my Life.' He ſaid, 'What you ſay 'is very true: Had I bereaved you of your 'Life, there could have been no Recompence, 'and we ſhould both have ſhared the ſame 'Fate. I am glad it hath happened otherwiſe.' 'Sir, ſaid I, I am glad you are convinced it 'would have been ſo.' I then obſerved to my Uncle, 'It plainly appears the guilty will caſt 'the firſt Stone; and it is an old Saying, *a 'guilty Conſcience needs no Accuſer*, as it will 'both accuſe and excuſe itſelf. For Reflection 'ſtrikes ſuch a Terror upon the Spirits, as can 'only be compared to a Hell upon Earth; but 'whether that be any Propitiation for the Sins 'of this World, I leave to the learned.'

Neither the old Man nor my Uncle made me any Reply; by which I found my Obſervations were not agreeable to the old Man. So I dropt the Diſcourſe, and we ſat down together, and drank our Bottle a-piece very chearfully. I was glad to find the Liquor had ſuch a good Effect, as to extinguiſh thoſe Flames, and moderate the Sting of Conſcience, that darts into the Minds of thoſe that are conſcious of Evil. But a conſcientious Man never finds that Torment, and his Days are a Pleaſure to him. As I had ſhewn the Difference between Good and Evil, I thought it prudent to accompliſh my Deſign, and drown all Thoughts that would not avail me. As I ſignified before, the Liquor had ſuch a good Effect, that the old Man and my Uncle were as jocular as if they had been but twenty. Therefore I thought it was right

to

to be as jocular as they, and forget all Grievances, which were all made up at that Meeting, and we parted like ſincere Friends; the old Man deſiring my Wife and me to dine with him the next Day; and my Uncle ſaid, he would lye at the old Man's, and ſtay to Dinner on the Morrow for us, on Purpoſe. We promiſed to wait on them.

The next Day, when I came to dreſs myſelf in order to accompany my Wife, according to our Promiſe, the Maid informed me, there were none but ſpeckled Shirts clean; and ſhe was very much againſt my going in one of them, as ſhe ſaid it would look diſreſpectful at the firſt Viſit. I ſaid, 'Child, do not think I am aſhamed of 'my Profeſſion: On the contrary, I am ſo 'proud of it, that I do not care though all 'the World knew it.' With that ſhe fetched one; but told my Wife, I inſiſted on one of the checkered Shirts, who ſaid to her, 'Never deny 'him any Thing, for he loves to have every 'Thing his own Way, and knows how to make 'an Excuſe for the Shirt; therefore take no 'Notice, but give him one.' The Maid always obſerved this Rule afterwards. The old Gentleman ſent his Chaiſe for us; and when we got to his Houſe, I made an Apology for my Shirt, by telling him that I was in two Minds, whether to come or not, as the Maid had neglected waſhing my Linen, and I had no white Linen clean; ſo that I was obliged to come in this Garb, or not at all; and hoped he would excuſe it. He deſired no Apologies, for he ſhould be glad to ſee me even without a Shirt;

Shirt; and when we entered the Parlour, my Uncle could not forbear laughing at my checker Shirt. I found by ſome Hints, that my Uncle had been talking with the old Man about my Courſe of Life; but all they could ſay, I knew, would have little Effect on me, as I was bent on going to *Flanders*, ſo I gave them their Way in every Thing.

After Dinner they aſked me what I propoſed to follow, to encreaſe my Fortune? I told them that I muſt go to *Deddington*, to ſettle ſome Affairs there, and afterwards would do any Thing that ſhould be agreeable to them. The old Man ſeemed very well pleaſed with the Reply; and I endeavoured to be as affable and engaging as I could, and pleaſed the old Man to ſuch a Degree, that before we parted, he went to his Scrutore, and gave me a Bank Note of 50 *l.* and a Note payable in thirty Days at *London* for 50 *l.* more. I returned him Thanks, but ſaid, I ſhould never be able to make him Amends for his Favours. He replied, that it was done already, and according as I behaved to my Wife, I ſhould experience more of them, and ſomething more advantageous:' 'For, ſaid he, 'I have no Relation I like ſo well as your 'Wife, and when I die, all I have ſhall come 'to her, if you turn out a good Huſband.' But this fine Proſpect could not reſtrain me from acting according to my former Reſolutions: And I can ſay more than Thouſands, that I refuſed a little Eſtate for ſeven Years Pleaſure. But though I call it Pleaſure, Thouſands would

would have given that Eſtate to have been abſent from the Noiſe of thoſe Cannon which I delighted in hearing. The old Man little thought how I intended to diſpoſe of myſelf, nor of ever ſeeing me more, but apprehended, that at my Return from *Oxfordſhire*, I ſhould ſettle and be a good Neighbour; and ſaid, it would be a Comfort to him in his old Age to have me ſo near him. At Parting he wiſhed me a good Journey, and hoped that I would ſtay no longer than was neceſſary; but deſired me to do my Buſineſs effectually before my Return. I told him that I intended to effectuate every Thing before my Return. But he meant one Thing, and I another.

Now I began to think that I had the worſt Trial to go through at laſt; to leave a Wife, ſuch as the Heavens could not produce a more virtuous, and a tender Mother, whom I loved as the Apple of my Eye; which gave me much Trouble. When I returned home, my Uncle came to me, and ſaid with Tears in his Eyes, 'Dear Couſin, as you have accompliſhed this 'great Work, and there is ſuch a Proſpect of 'Happineſs before your Eyes, I beg of you to 'be conformable, and pleaſe your Relations, by 'breaking your former Reſolutions and In-'tentions that you obſerved to me.' I replied, 'Sir, I render you a thouſand Thanks for your 'good Advice; but ſhould think myſelf unde-'ſerving of the Bleſſings of the Almighty, if I 'did not endeavour to fulfil my Reſolutions, 'and by ſo doing to call myſelf a Man of Ho-

'nour; otherwiſe I ſhould be a Knave, to fall 'from a good Inclination for the Love of Pelf. 'I am a Man that values my Honour more 'than Riches, and ever will maintain it by 'Juſtice. Therefore it is in vain for any one 'to endeavour to reſtrain me by Perſuaſions; 'for I am not like Men puffed with Riches, 'who drop the good Intentions they had be-'fore the Bribe was offered. In fine, Sir, all 'the Inducements in Life can have no Effect 'upon me, for I ſhall endeavour to wade 'through the Campaign with the ſame Induſtry 'and Care as I have done through the Seas.' As my Uncle found he could do no Good, he ſaid, 'Couſin, I am ſorry you are ſo reſolute 'and opiniative as not to take Advice; but 'ſince it is ſo, you muſt take your Chance; and 'I hope that, through the Goodneſs of the Al-'mighty, you will be proſperous in all your 'Undertakings, and live to enjoy what you 'ſhall acquire hereafter: Though it will be 'a Miracle ſhould you eſcape this ſecond Ex-'pedition, as we are likely to have ſome bloody 'Battles. 'Sir, ſaid I, Providence has hi-'therto been my Friend, and I do not doubt 'it's Continuance till we have defeated our E-'nemies.' We bid Adieu to each other; and when he was gone, I began to think of my Mother; and as I purpoſed to make good my Promiſe and fulfil her Deſire, I informed my Wife of it, and that there was ſome Buſineſs which had not been ſettled ſince my Father's Death. She agreed to our going, and I took three Places

in

in the Stage-Coach, for myſelf, her, and her Maid. In the mean Time, ſhe perceiving my exceſſive Hurry, grew very inquiſitive, and ſaid to me, amongſt other Things, 'My Dear, I 'hope you have no Thoughts of going again to 'Sea, as I have waited ſo many Years in Ex-'pectation of your ſettling, when you came 'home; and if you ſhould leave me at laſt, it 'would break my Heart.' Theſe Words cut me, but I ſtrove to blind her as much as I could, ſaying, 'I am ſurpriſed you ſhould imagine 'that I have any Inclination for going to Sea 'again, now I am ſo happily married, and 'have ſuch a good Proſpect before my Eyes. 'Sure you muſt take me for a Fool or a Mad-'man, to carry the Burden when I can have it 'carried for me. Pray, my Dear, do not 'have ſuch an ill Opinion of me, for I am de-'termined to fulfil all my Reſolutions, and 'hope to live to make good all thoſe Defici-'encies my frail Nature has been guilty of.' She not knowing how to take my Reply, ſaid, 'Pardon me, my Dear; but I know your Re-'ſolution is ſuch as never to fly from your 'Word, which makes me fear you have pro-'miſed to go again.' This was too cloſe; therefore I changed the Diſcourſe, ſaying, 'Pray 'let us drop this Diſcourſe, which will not a-'vail you, and let us think of purſuing our 'Journey.' She wept at my ſlighting her Diſ-courſe; but I did not think proper to deceive her by flattering Speeches and lying Lips; but ſaid, 'My Dear, you know my Temper is ne-

'ver to make my Intentions known till it is 'proper; and I wonder you ſhould teize me 'with what I abominate. You perplex my 'Soul with ſo doing, and may occaſion me to 'do what I never intended.' She, finding what Effect it had on me, reflected within herſelf, and was very conformable afterwards. We took Coach, as I obſerved before, and came to *London*, where I ſtaid two or three Days, to ſhew her the Diverſions of the Town, and then took Places in the Stage for *Oxford*, in which pleaſant City we ſtaid four or five Days, to view the Colleges and whatever was obſervable. At the Inn where we lodged an Officer quartered, who joined Company, breakfaſted, dined, and ſupped with us all the Time we were there. He finding I had been abroad, we had ſeveral Diſcourſes, with which he was highly delighted, and ſaid I deſerved a Ship of my own; but as he underſtood I had Money, he would adviſe me to purchaſe a Commiſſion in the Land Service. I told him I never would buy Honour, neither did I intend more than to carry a Firelock, at which I have an excellent Hand, and might probably do more Execution than twenty others. He was very well entertained with my Diſcourſe, and would fain have perſuaded me to continue there a Day or two longer; but I deſired to be excuſed, as I had promiſed my Wife to ſet out the next Day, and had given Earneſt for a Chaiſe for my Maid. But had I been alone, I ſhould not have grudged a Week's Time. The next Morning we break-

breakfaſted together, and after drinking a Bottle of Sack parted with a hearty Farewel.

We had not gone above two Miles, when I began to reflect how forgetful I had been in not aſking the Gentleman's Name and what Regiment he belonged to, and could not help thinking what a brave Opportunity I had loſt by having my Wife along with me; and thought how agreeable it would have been at firſt entering to be with a Man of ſuch Veracity and Sincerity; for I am certain by his Behaviour there would have been a great Intimacy between us, although he was in a Rank ſuperior to what I propoſed being in. Theſe Thoughts made the Journey not altogether ſo pleaſant as it uſed to be. This made my Wife imagine ſomething had diſpleaſed me, which ſhe ſaid ſhe could perceive by my Looks. But I did not ſatisfy her. When we came to *Deddington*, I went to my Aunt *Smith*'s, and ſent for my poor Mother, who was condoling for me, thinking ſhe ſhould never ſee me more. As ſoon as ſhe came, before I had Time to ſpeak to her, ſhe fell into a Fit, which laſted for half an Hour, which they told me ſhe had been ſubject to ever ſince my going abroad; and when I aſked if any Thing troubled her, ſhe replied, I fear my poor Child is killed. When I heard this, I could not help reflecting what an Effect my going abroad had on my Family: My Father broke his Heart, and my Mother was at Times bereaved of her Senſes; which made me curſe my unhappy Fate, to be ſuch a diſobedient Son.

When my Mother came to herſelf again, I preſented my Wife to her, and ſhe liked my Choice very well, begged God to bleſs us, and hoped that we might live to ſee more comfortable Days than ſhe had done; and that I might think of ſettling after all my Figaries. All this had no Effect on my Inclinations, that were longing to be abroad, thinking every Day a Week, and Week a Month. We ſpent that Night very merrily, and next Morning I thought it high Time to diſcloſe ſome of thoſe Thoughts that my Breaſt contained. Therefore I told my Mother, that I intended to ſend for my Father's Lawyer, to look over ſome Writings; which ſhe conſented to, and when he came, I told him my Intention in theſe Words: 'Sir, I purpoſe to bequeath to my Wife and Mother all my Income during my Abſence; and ſhould any Thing happen to me, what I have I leave to them for their Lives: And in caſe my Wife ſhould bring forth a Child, it ſhall go to that Child after their Deaths. And beg you will get it drawn up as ſoon as poſſible.' He was not long about it; and when it was ſigned, I ſaid to my Mother and Wife before the Lawyer, *All this I bequeath to you till my Return, which will be in a ſhort Time; though I cannot poſitively ſay on what Day: But you may be ſure I will be as expeditious as I can.* They were very deſirous of knowing where I intended to go; but I put them off by telling them, that I promiſed to meet a Friend in a certain Place, whom I ſhould be ſorry to diſappoint.

They asked me if I could not judge the Time within a Day or two, on Account of sending my Linen. I said, to prevent any Thing that might happen, I would take enough to serve me a Month. They were surprised at that, and my Mother said, *Dear Child, where can you go for a Month?* I replied, *Dear Mother, you are sensible that I have had no Time upon my Hands since my coming to* England; *therefore I will take the Opportunity, after I have finished my Business, to go and visit all my Relations; which you know will take me up more Time than I can imagine: For I am determined to have some Correspondence with them, now I am come home. And if I do not take a Round and see them, they will think me dead: But my Appearance will clear up their Doubts.*

" And when I've travers'd through this Scene of Life,
" Then I'll dwell comfortably with my Wife.

They asked why I left those Writings with them, as they thought there was no Necessity for it; and said that I made as much Preparation as if I had been going for a Twelvemonth. I told them that I thought all Mankind that were married should be cautious of Accidents in Life, and, though the Journey be ever so short, should leave a Will behind them, especially where there is a Family; through the Neglect of which Ruptures have been often caused amongst Relations, and Lawyers have got the biggest Part of their Estates. But I will pre-

vent them having any of mine. This I ſaid, becauſe I was willing they ſhould not know what the Writings meant; and they were both well pleaſed at my Sentiments; and my Wife ſaid, *your Care is deſerving of more than abounds in me*; and my Mother ſaid, *Son, I perceive all your good-natured Actions will be crowned in a Wife, for ſhe has a Capacity more than is common in our Sex: Therefore I beg you to be kind to her, and endeavour to pleaſe her; and let me intreat you to think no more of any Frolicks, but ſtudy to live comfortably in this World.* Theſe I began to think were not bad Inſtructions, though from an old Woman. But nothing could reſtrain my Inclinations from that noble Employment.

I ſaid to them after this Manner; what I am going to ſignify to you is nothing but Fact; I am determined, after this Journey and my Buſineſs is completed, to give myſelf up to a ſober and godly Courſe of Life, which I am ſenſible is moſt agreeable to God and Man; and my Endeavours ſhall be a Pattern for all Mankind. They did not underſtand my Diſcourſe, but aſked me when I purpoſed going my Journey, for my Abſence would not be very agreeable. I told them, in three Days Time; and, ſaid I, you may depend on it, that I ſhall not take ſuch another Journey in Haſte; neither ſhould I take this, but Neceſſity obliges me to it. My Mother replied, if it was abſolutely neceſſary, I would have you go in God's Name. I pleaſed myſelf with the Thoughts that my long Conference would keep them ignorant of my

In-

Intentions till I could bid my Country Adieu, when it would be Time enough to reveal them. For when any unexpected Diſaſter happens, a Man is apt to reflect upon himſelf, 'Oh! had 'I done ſuch a Thing, I might have prevented 'the Evil that has brought on my Misfortunes.' Therefore it is impoſſible for a Man to have too much Precaution in precarious Affairs. I have often thought there was a Poſſibility of chuſing the Good and refuſing the Evil; but there is not: For when a Man has endeavoured for the beſt, it has turned out the reverſe. Therefore I will ſay once more, that Providence is the chief Director and only Guide. When I had made theſe Remarks, I thought it would be prudent to invent ſomething to divert my Mother and Wife, who were both prodigiouſly thoughtful. So I ſent for my Aunt, who I knew to be a very merry Companion, to expel theſe vain Thoughts, which I knew would not avail them. And when ſhe came, ſhe ſaid to my Mother, 'Siſter, 'you and my Niece are very diſconſolate; let 'us have a Game at Whiſt; for I came pur-'poſely to be merry with you this Afternoon, 'and ſhould be ſorry to be diſappointed of my 'intended Pleaſure.' I brought out a Bottle of Wine, and ſaid, Aunt, this is the firſt Time I ever had the Pleaſure to ſee you at my Houſe ſince my Return, therefore I inſiſt on your taking a Glaſs before Cards. She ſaid, with all her Heart, if her Siſter was willing to partake. She condeſcended, and we paſſed the Evening over a Bottle very agreeably, my Aunt ſinging a de-

lightful Song, and my Wife returning another; ſo that I was charmed with their muſical Voices. My Mother was in the higheſt Spirits that I ever ſaw her; which was all owing to my Aunt's Company, for which I returned her Thanks. She ſaid, ſhe ſhould have been glad of the Pleaſure of ſeeing us at her Houſe the next Evening; but that as I was going a Journey, ſhe would defer it till another Time. She aſked me how long I intended to ſtay? I told her, they would either ſee or hear from me in about a Month. Lord! ſaid ſhe, I thought you did not intend to be gone above two or three Days. But pray then, Siſter, do you and my Niece come; and I hope to have the Pleaſure of ſeeing you often during his Abſence, for it will be a ſort of an Amuſement for you. They replied, they would wait on her. She was for going, but I deſired her to ſtay and take a Glaſs of Uſquebaugh: She did, and ſaid it was an excellent Dram, and extremely good of the Sort. I told her, my Father uſed it by way of a Cordial. She ſhook her Head, and we parted.

When my Aunt was gone, I thought it would be beſt to pack up my Things, that I might have nothing to hinder me in the Morning. Accordingly I deſired my Wife to give me every Thing neceſſary; for as I intended to ſet out early next Morning, it was requiſite to get every Thing in Order. When we had done packing, we went to Bed, though I might as well have ſat up, for the Sleep I had; and my poor Wife ſaid that ſhe never laid her Eye-lids together

ther all Night, but was very uneasy; which I was sensible of, though not to her Knowledge, for I lay very still, like as if I had been asleep, but was broad awake. And as I found she was so deeply concerned at my going, it put into my Head the following Lines, which I put into her Hands at parting, and desired her to peruse them in my Absence.

My Dear! it grieves my Soul to part from you,
Though this in Honour I'm compell'd to do.
In you, alas! what boundless Joys I found!
And with Sincerity all those Joys were crown'd.
The Thoughts of parting fill my Eyes with Tears,
And rend my Heart with tender, anxious Fears
For You, to whom I ever shall be true;
But yet my Queen expects my Duty too.
Her Service now has called me aside,
And of the two I must neglect my Bride.
But pardon, Dearest! 'tis a deep Concern;
And Providence will skreen me from all Harm.
My Country serv'd, then unto thee I'll fly,
And all thy faithful Deeds will gratify.
Enraptur'd then with thy endearing Charms,
Which even now invite me to your Arms;
Could I with Truth embrace my Liberty;
But Honour binds; and that will set me free.
Then the more constant that I find you prov'd,
The more my Passion will to you be mov'd:
And always praise thee for thy sincere Part,
And this you may believe is from my Heart.

CHAP. XIX.

The Author lists in the Land Service: His success in Recruiting: Lands at Helvoet Sluice: *Goes to* Ghent *and* Auterdam: *Remarkable Incidents at both these Places.*

IN 1706 after I had taken my leave of my Wife and Mother, I made the best of my way to *Oxford*; hoping to find the Gentleman, that I was so well entertained by; though when I came there, to my great Sorrow I found he had been gone four Days. Then I walked about the Town, in a disconsolate manner; longing to hear, if possible, of some recruiting Officers, but was disappointed. For after I made all the Enquiry I could, I found none. Upon this I was very uneasy in my Mind, to think I should be disappointed of my intended Pleasure; and being excessively low spirited, I went to my Inn and got a Bowl of Punch, which in some Measure revived me. Then I sent for my Landlord, and embraced his Company till he was obliged to be carried out of the Room, as he was not able to walk out of himself, being so prodigious drunk that all his Senses were quite taken away. Then I went to Bed and diverted myself, and was excessively chearful with the Thoughts of what the Morrow might bring forth. It being the Market-Day, I hoped it might produce something extraordinary. With these pleasing Thoughts, I laid my Eyelids

lids together; but as ſoon as I was aſleep, my Thoughts were diſperſed in foreign Parts, and I fancied I was exerting myſelf againſt the *French*. But in the height of this I awaked, and found it a Dream. Then I could not help thinking there was nothing but Diſappointments in Life, though I imputed it to a Dream, and went to ſleep again; but yet was ſorry it did not prove true in Fact. In the Morning I awoke and looked out of the Window, and it appeared to me to be a very promiſing Day, which I was much delighted with. Therefore I dreſt myſelf very clean, and put a Cockcade in my Hat. So that ſeveral took me to be an Officer, but I deceived them greatly, for my Ambition did not riſe to that Sphere, but in the loweſt Rank of all. There were my Inclinations centred, as the Reader will find. After I had broke my faſt, I walked backwards and forwards in the Town, for a conſiderable time, till I grew very impatient, and was juſt going to give up all Hopes of finding what I wanted that Day. But as I was thinking, I ſaw at a great way off a red Coat, though at ſuch a diſtance that I could not diſcern any Thing elſe. But to ſatisfy my Curioſity I met them, and found them to be what I wiſhed for, to my great Joy. Then I went up to them, and aſked them what Regiment they belonged to. The Sergeant made anſwer and told me, they belonged to the Queen's marching Regiment of foot commanded by General *Webb*. I told them that I had as great a Value for that, as any belonging to her Majeſty's

jeſty's Serrvice. The Sergeant perceiving my Cockcade, ſaid, pray Sir, what Regiment do you belong to? Sir, replied I, I don't belong to any at preſent: Though I intend to belong to yours very ſoon. The Sergeant ſaid, Sir, I wiſh you may, there are ſeveral Vacancies in our Regiment which want filling up. Sir ſaid I, I humbly perceive there doth, or there would be no Neceſſity for your Recruiting. The Sergeant being a very briſk Man, anſwered me in this manner, Sir, we don't recruit for Officers, we recruit for private Men. Therefore, I ſaid to him, would you be pleaſed to accept of me as a private Man. He ſaid, Sir, you will accept of ſomething better than to be a private Man, I thought they did me a great deal of Honour by ſaying that. Therefore I begged the Favour of them to accept of a Glaſs of Wine, which they very willingly received. Though the Reader will ſay that it is a very uncommon Way to treat, as the Generality of them expects to be treated, before they will entertain, and I verily believe there is but few that ever did it beſides myſelf. But I ſtrove to be of a different Nature from the Generality of Mankind, and that not in one Reſpect only, but in all my Proceedings of Life, which were the Reſult of Deliberation. And I found it no Difficulty to be particular, as my Intention was good, as you will find. When I had treated the Sergeant, Corporal and Drummer, with a Bottle of Wine, I took the Sergeant aſide, into another Room, and aſked him ſeveral Queſtions. But I thought it would be prudent

prudent at first to forewarn him, lest he should any ways think that I did it by way of a Joke; for by so thinking, he might support that, and carry it on as such, and deceive me. But to convince him there were no such things meant, I begged he would be attentive to what I was going to signify to him. *Sir*, I said, *I deceive no Man, therefore I hope you will not any ways deceive me, in these Articles. I hope you will be so kind as to inform me, if in your Power, or to the best of your Knowledge, whether you think there is a Possibility of knowing the exact time of your going abroad.* Sir, answered he, *it is impossible of knowing the Day, but I am certain we shall go in about a Fortnight or three Weekes at farthest; for we shall be in* London *by the latter End of next Week, in order to go. Well,* continued I, *since you go so soon I am determin'd to accompany you there, and from this time I will call myself one of your Recruits, though you need not take any notice to the Corporal and Drummer, no other, than the young Man has a Mind to have a Frolick and march with us to* London, *you may confide in what I say.* He took my Word till we went to *London*, though after our long Conference, I desired, *he would acquaint me what Company he was a recruiting for.* He said, *Captain* Beschefer's, *and no other.* Then I told him, *after he had got his Billet, and likewise got himself clean, I would be ready to assist him in the Town. Come, who knows but through my Instigation you may get several young Men.* And as I said, we did get three very pretty young

Men

Men. After this, I took them all to my Inn, and we were exceſſively merry that Evening, and properly Sons of *Bacchus*, as we were drinking and revelling all the Night. The Liquor had a very great Effect on the young Men, ſo that it rendered them unfit for travelling till four o'Clock in the Afternoon. So that we did not march far that Evening, though it were in the Road to *London*, that was what I wanted, and as we were a going along the Road the young Men complained that their Heads ached prodigiouſly. Then I endeavoured to revive them, by ſaying I intended to have a Bowl of Punch, by way of a Settler and then to go to Bed upon it, and in the Morning I dare anſwer for it, you will all forget it, or leave it behind you. This in ſome Meaſure pleaſed them, and they were ſeemingly in much better Spirits than before; therefore they all ſaid, *with all our Hearts*; for they thought it would be very agreeable after Supper. Then I told them, as it had not affected their Stomachs by taking away their Appetite, they would do very well again, I perceived; and according to their Deſire I ſtrove to execute every Thing, and bring it to Perfection. So after Supper I deſired the Landlord would bring in a Quart of Brandy and a Pint of Rum, likewiſe Lemons and Sugar, for I purpoſed to make a large Bowl of Punch and drink it, and then to Bed. Accordingly he brought every thing requiſite to make it good, and over the Bowl I aſked the Sergeant, *how long he had been recruiting?* He told me, *ſix Weeks.* The

Reaſon of my aſking him that Queſtion, was becauſe he had no Recruits, but what he got at *Oxford.* He made me an Anſwer in this manner, *he had ſent up ten Recruits, by a Sergeant belonging to our Regiment.* Then ſaid I, *Come, brother Soldier, we will get Ten more before we reach* London, *if there is any Poſſibility of effecting it.* After the Bowl we all went to bed, and in the Morning aroſe and marched on the Road to *London.* They were all prodigiouſly merry; therefore I deſired they would keep ſome of their Spirits, till we ſhould come near *Tetſworth*, or any other Town: For if they exhauſted themſelves too much then, they would not be able to exert themſelves when required. The Sergeant approved of this Advice. When we drew near the next Town I begged they would ſing a merry Song, and the Drum might help them out by beating. They obſerved what I ſaid, and gave true Attention to what I meant; therefore they began to tune up their Voices, when we came near *Tetſworth*, and I joined Chorus with them, ſo that we alarmed all the Town preſently. Then I went into the beſt Inn, and called for a Gallon of ſtrong Beer to treat the Populace that came round us, and when that was drank I called for another, and deſired ſeveral of the young Men that came to ſee us, *to drink what would do them good, though not to gorge themſelves.* By virtue of the Beer and our talking, we prevailed on two young Men to go along with us, an Hoſtler of the Inn and a young Man of the Town, who was going

to

to Plough. I prevailed on the latter by saying, *leave your Plough and come along with me, and plough for Riches and Honour, and don't plough for Poverty all the Days of your Life.* He very readily comply'd and told the little Boy *to take the Horses home again, and tell his Master that he was going to plough for a better Master.* Accordingly the Boy went home and told his Master, and he came to us in a violent Rage, and swore by all that was Good, he would send his Man to *Bridewell*, if he did not go home with him, and do his Duty. Then I took upon me to speak to him, in this manner, *Sir, I am surprised you should put yourself in such a violent Passion, when there is no Necessity for it. I would not have you think it is in your Power to deny the young Man his Talent, or any Thing belonging to him. How could you presume to deny her Majesty, or to usurp what you can't justify? I hope you did not think to frighten me, who have faced a Thousand better Men than you. Come, to make short of my Story, we are in Haste; I beg you will give the Man his just Due, or Necessity will oblige me to take you before a Justice of Peace.* That put him into a panick Fear, so he drew the Purse out of his Pocket, and said, for God's Sake take the Money and let me go. I was glad to hear that. Then I released the Farmer, and went with the young Man to his House, for what Things he thought proper to take with him, and when so done, we all marched for *High Wickam.* As soon as we left *Tetsworth*, the Sergeant was prodigiously merry.

With

With that I asked him the Reason of his Extasy. He told me, *his Transport proceeded from my Dexterity and artful Inventions. Likewise my Conformity, being so agreeable and suitable to the Commonality of People. Methinks*, said he, *I grudge you your Genius.* I rendered him Thanks for his Compliment, but yet desired he would not begrudge me any Thing; for I should use the utmost of my Endeavours to make him shine in the next Town. But in the mean time I thought it would be proper to keep up our Spirits; therefore we called at *Stoken Church*, and revived ourselves with a large Dram of Rum. Then I thought it would be commendable to proceed forward in our Journey, if we intended to reach *Wickam* that Night. The Sergeant was a little inclinable to stay, but through my Persuasions was prevailed on to go. When we came within Sight of *Wickam*, they all seemingly were prodigiously Leg-weary. Then I thought it would be requisite to try if they had any Courage in them. Wherefore I cut three Sticks out of the Hedge and stuck two in the Ground and put the other across, then I spoke to them all, and said, *I will forfeit a Crown Bowl of Punch, if any of you all jump over this Stick. Come, you shall see me do it first.* When I had done it, they all stript; but some could not jump above half a Yard from the Ground. I thought they were an excessive While about it; therefore I looked on my Watch, and finding they had been above half an Hour, I said, *Gentlemen, I think you are all deserving of what I*

mentioned,

mentioned; therefore I would not have you ſtrain yourſelves by any means in Life. That made them the more eager about it. But finding it impracticable by them, I deſired they would not ſtrive any longer as their Nerves were not in a proper Tone for ſuch Exerciſe. Let me intreat you to deſiſt, if you have a Mind to prevent any Hurt, that may be very prejudicial to you. The thing is eaſily done, when your Veins and Fibres are in a proper Diſpoſition. That had ſome Influence on them, they put on their Clothes, and acknowledged me to be the Conqueror. Then we made the beſt of our Way to the Town, and got Billets for all the Men. When ſo done, I deſired they would all favour me with their Company, to drink the Bowl of Punch. I thought that might very poſſibly create in them new Spirits, and by that Means we might increaſe our Flock, as you will find we did. After we had drank ſufficient to make us capable of performing ſomething material, all my Drift was to get a Poſſe of People together, which was done in this manner. I prevailed on the Sergeant to allow the Drum to beat at the Door, which he did for a conſiderable Time, and in the mean Time I filled the Bowl once more, and got a Man to carry it about the Town upon his Head, that we might drink Succeſs to her Majeſty's Arms. After the Sergeant had made his Speech, my View was to endeavour to get the young Men of the Town to pledge us, and to partake of the Bowl; but they were all prodigiouſly ſhy, and afraid to

kiſs

kiſs the Glaſs, at firſt. Then I ſaid, *I don't queſtion but all theſe Gentlemen have ſuch a regard for her Majeſty, that it is not in their Nature to refuſe a Glaſs to her Health, when 'tis offered; if they did, I ſhould not call them any of the Queen's loyal Subjects or Well-wiſhers to her Kingdom, but look on them as no better than Rebels, and I will take them up as ſuch, if they any ways ſlight her Majeſty in my Sight, either in their Behaviour or Speech.* With that ſome of them drew in their Horns, and had not a Word to ſay, but deſerted and abſconded from us. By that means I found out the true Subject I had to work on, and read their Hearts by their Behaviour. Therefore, I choſe thoſe that I thought would be of Service to her moſt ſublime Majeſty, which was done by giving true Attention to their Behaviour. Thus I valued myſelf upon diſtinguiſhing their Inclinations and Diſpoſitions. Then I made a Diviſion, ſome I pen'd in my Mind, and others were croſs'd out. By the time we came to our Inn or Place of Rencounter, they all deſerted me, but thoſe I fixed my Eyes upon, which were four clean looking Men. I took them into the Houſe, examined them and found them to be what I had been wiſhing for. After my Application they told me, I had an irreſiſtable Power over them, and they could not withſtand the Temptation I had given them, but were willing to condeſcend to any Thing, that I thought would be for their Good. As they had given me this Preference, I preſcribed what was moſt agreeable to myſelf,

which is very natural for a Man, when 'tis put in his Power. First of all, I laid my Case before them, *that I left all that was dear to me in the World, on purpose to go along with this Gentleman, meaning the Sergeant, therefore I shall be proud of the Opportunity of imbracing your Companies, and nothing shall be wanting in me if I can any ways be of Service to you, by bringing you to Preferment.* The poor Men imagined that I was the Officer before I explain'd myself in this manner. Yet they were Men of Resolution, and did not fly from their Words but stood firmly to what they first proposed. Therefore I called them *Men after my own Heart*, and worthy of that honourable Calling, worthy our endeavouring to purchase them, seeing fair Words would do. I have often made this Observation, and found it to be the only thing Mankind can depend upon, in recruiting; that is, if People's Inclination is to be of Service to the Government, they will be compliable and come into your Measures. Otherwise they will make every thing that is proposed to them nothing but Difficulties, and need much entreating, which is no Advantage to any one, to seek after them, neither for their Profit nor Credit. I hope this may diffuse itself in all Parts of *England*; for I will aver, it is the material Thing belonging to recruiting, and the only Method I should take was I to go again. But in the mean time, I am a Well-wisher to that Employment, and never shall relinquish my Affection for it, as long as I live.

When

When I had prevailed on the young Men to go along with us, we all went to Supper, and after Supper we drank ſufficient to ſatisfy any moderate Men. Then the Sergeant and I agreed to take a Bedfellow apiece, and the Corporal and Drummer the other two. When it was ſo agreed, I could not go to bed with a ſafe Conſcience, till we had ſomething hot to drink to our good Repoſe, which was burnt Wine. Then we were all determined to go to bed upon it, and in the Morning, after Breakfaſt, we left that Place and marched for *Uxbridge*. In walking along the Road, I aſked all the young Men *whether they any ways repented of their Engagement?* They all made me Anſwer, *they had no Reaſon to repent as yet.* Then I ſaid, *Gentlemen, you may confide in what I ſay, if you apply to me at any time, there ſhall nothing be wanting in me, if in my Power, to ſerve you.* They all rendered me Thanks, and were very jocoſe, which made it a pleaſant March to *Uxbridge*.

On the Road the Sergeant ſaid, he purpoſed to ſtay two or three Days there, as there was no Neceſſity for our being in an exceſſive Hurry. I thought it would be prudent, as we were to have ſo much Time upon our Hands, to go into the Town and make ſome Enquiry, to render us capable of doing ſomething on the Morrow. Therefore we all agreed to take a Round to every Ale Houſe in the Place, on purpoſe to have a kind of Inſpection over the People, to find out their Conſtitutions. After we had ſo done, we had a long Conſultation about our

Proceedings, and they all ſeemingly agreed to theſe my Sentiments. 'Gentlemen, as our 'Undertaking is a thing of ſome Conſequence, 'and of weighty Concern upon my Spirits; 'I beg you will give true Attention to what 'I am going to ſignify to you all. To ſerve her 'moſt ſublime Majeſty faithfully, you muſt relin-'quiſh all other Thoughts but that only, and give 'yourſelves up entirely to it. This in parti-'cular, I would have you all be mindful of, 'and I don't queſtion in the leaſt but we ſhall 'be ſucceſsful, as there is no other Likelihood 'at preſent than to accompliſh our Intent. For 'the young Men, that I converſed with, have 'all ſome Veracity in them. You all find, I 'had reaſon to ſtudy them beforehand. Had 'I not I ſhould not have invented this Scheme; 'and you may all depend upon what I ſay, 'there is no Good done in this World without 'Courage and Conduct to guide your Ac-'tions. I hope to morrow you will be as dili-'gent and mindful as poſſibly you can. For 'I intend to ſurround them, and by ſome Means 'or other put ourſelves in a Poſture that we may 'be capable of compaſſing, and bringing them 'under our Juriſdicton, or all we can find into 'our Company at leaſt. For I don't value if 'I give them a Treat of 20 Shillings. I am ſen-'ſible that will be a great Inducement to them, 'and if they are conformable I ſhall not any 'ways begrudge my Endeavours, let it be how 'it will.' Upon that, we were all determin'd

to go to bed, and in the Morning we met together again, and consulted how to act, which was to be in this manner. We agreed to go out in separate Parties and prevail upon whom we could, and then to meet all together again at the Hour of two o'Clock. That was the appointed Time, to apply the Remedy or find the Effects of our Attempts. As we were in four Divisions, every one was to do his best. Through my Instigations I brought Four to the Place appointed, and they prevailed upon Six to come along with them; so that we were a jovial Company, and nothing but Gaiety and Mirth were our Companions. They continued with their Jocosity for a considerable While, till I thought it high time to open the Scenes. I said, *Gentlemen, you have given me such Pleasure, that I shall be very unhappy at the Time of our parting. I could wish to embrace your good Companies often, for my Happiness depends upon such jolly Men as you.* With that they said, *what will you give us to go along with you?* I said, *Gentlemen, you shall have good Usage, which is preferable to Riches. No Man living can desire more, for those that refuse good Liquor and a good Companion, will refuse every Thing that is good. Therefore I hope you will not deny yourselves, of what all the World value before Wealth.* They all made Answer, *that I gave them such Incouragement, that they could not tell how to avoid going along with us.* That delighted me much, and my Spirits rose to such a Height, that I was capable of doing any thing. Then I said,

Gentlemen, ſince you are ſo condeſcending and of ſuch yielding Natures, let me prevail upon you all, to make out this Evening with all the Mirth we can invent. They all agreed to that, and ſaid, *as they were never ſo well entertained in their Lives, ſo they would embrace this Opportunity, leſt they ſhould never have ſuch another.* I ſaid, *if they would go with me, their Days would be a Pleaſure to them; though now a Fatigue and a Burthen. Who would be a Slave when in their Power to be otherways?* thoſe words, they ſaid, determined them to go with us. Upon this I called for a Bowl of Punch, and we were exceſſively merry all the Evening, till Sleep overcame them, or the Liquor affected their Brains, and then I was obliged to put them to bed. For a further Safeguard, I gave the Drawer a Crown to ſit up all Night to watch them for fear they ſhould riſe before us, and give us the Slip. I needed not to have done this; for they did not any ways reflect on themſelves, but were ſeemingly pleaſed with our Evening Proceedings, and wanted to be in *London*. Therefore I thought proper to intimate to the Sergeant, what they had declared to me. Then he condeſcended to go about ten o'clock. They all were prodigiouſly pleaſed, and we had a pleaſant Walk to *London*.

When we came there, we made the beſt of our way to the Tower, and found we were to continue there four or five Days. I was glad to hear that, upon the account of my having an Opportunity of receiving the 50 *l.* which my

Wife's

Wife's Grandfather gave me. So the next Morning I took a walk in the Town, and went and received my Money. Then I returned to my Station again, and made myself merry with the Recruits all the time of our being in the Tower. But I had like to have turned out the unthinking young Man, by neglecting till the last Day, a thing that I thought of great Consequence, taking up Bills of Exchange for my Money. This was very necessary to prevent any Disaster. I luckily changed my Money into Paper, and returned to the Tower again. Then I began to think, as my time was so short in *England*, it would be grateful in me to send a Letter to my Wife, to let her know my full Intention before we parted, of which I gave her a hint only. But I thought that not sufficient, as it did not explain my Intention fully. Therefore I was fully determined to go and indite two or three Lines to her which were as follow.

My Dear,

AS I have entered into so near an Alliance with you, I am conscious to myself that I have incurr'd your Displeasure; but I hope you will impute it to it's real Cause, an earnest Desire of going into *Flanders*, to be assisting to her Majesty's Forces. And as her sovereign Commands are undeniable, it admits no Hesitation. I know you are so discreet as to distinguish that it is not out of Disregard to you, but from a longing Inclination to defend a good Cause. Therefore I beg it may not create any Uneasi-

neſs in you or my Mother; and that neither of you be any ways diſmayed at it. I am going this inſtant to bid *England* farewel, for a Term, to give Proofs of my Loyalty and Faithfulneſs, which I hope I ſhall always be able to ſupport againſt the Temptations of this World. So I conclude with my ſincere and affectionate good Wiſhes to you, with whom I will join my Mother in Prayers for ever.

Matthew Biſhop.

When I bid *London* adieu, we all went aboard of a Hoy, and made the beſt of our Way to *Harwich*. There we continued ſome time, till Recruits of other Regiments came up in order to go in the ſame Veſſel. All the time of our Continuance, we diverted ourſelves with ſome Feat of Activity or other. One Day in particular we were all extremely merry and went to jumping by the Sea Banks. One Sergeant *Littler*, belonging to *Godfrey*'s Regiment, beat us all in jumping. Since, for his Valor, he has obtained a Company in the firſt Regiment of Foot-guards. But as I obſerved before, we were daily playing the Wag, and as jocular as ever Men were all the time we ſtayed there, and when we left that Place we ſteered our Courſe for *Helvoet Sluice* in *Holland*, and the Wind being fair for us, made it a pleaſant Sail. As ſoon as we came there, there were Orders given for another Veſſel to carry us to *Saſh Ghent*. Before we could reach that Place we met with a contrary Wind, which very much

much damaged our Veſſel; but all the Sailors were vigorous and did their Buſineſs with Courage. I was aſſiſtant to them, for I ſpliced ſeveral Ropes that were broke in the Hurricane. At the ſame time, ſome of our Men were prodigiouſly affrighted, and others very ſick, but I did in ſome meaſure revive them by ſaying it was a Trifle and not worth ſpeaking of, for there was no Appearance of Danger before us. By that Method I heartened them.

With ſome Difficulty we arrived at *Saſh Ghent*, where we landed and had Orders to march to *Ghent*, which is four Leagues diſtant. We were not long in marching that Ground over, for all of us wanted to be at the Place of Rendezvous. When we came there we found that our Regiment were in the *Spaniſh* Caſtle, which we made for. Then we were ordered to our Barracks and on the Morrow we all received our Arms and Accoutrements fitting for a Soldier. As I was in a ſtrange Place, I had the Curioſity to walk in the Town, and was very inquiſitive in aſking about every particular Thing that was worth my Obſervation. Here I accidentally met with ſeveral of my Countrymen, who were overjoy'd to ſee me. They were Men of Subſtance, and my particular Acquaintance, which made my Continuance very agreeable. They deſired to ſee me often, without any Ceremony at all, and between them I had my chief Subſiſtence all the time I continued there. For I frequently uſed to go to them, ſo that I became a great Viſitor. But I always obſerved to be

ready

ready in the Barracks when called for. Yet the Men began to grow jealous of me, thinking I had more Favour ſhewed me than others, by going out ſo often. But I told them, that I was ſorry my going out ſhould create in them ſuch a Jealouſy, and that I had taken the Liberty of myſelf. Then there was a Report made to the Captain of my Proceedings. But the Captain did not give much Attention to it, as I found by the Return of the Corporal, which was that the Captain thought it too great a Fatigue for me, to go out at Nights, as I was to learn my Exerciſe to be fit to go into the Battalion. I made Anſwer, that no one need be in Care for me, in regard to my Exerciſe, as I was not far to ſeek for it, and would ſoon be able to do it effectually. So the Men finding the Report had but little Effect with regard to me, it ſilenced their Clamour, and they never were guilty of the ſame again, but always after ſhewed me ſome Reſpect, and were ſeemingly afraid to offend me. And in truth I gave them no other room than to be obſerving; for my Behaviour was ſuch that they could not well avoid it without being determined to keep out of my way, as you will find.

As the Corporal had made ſo favourable a Report, I took him to the Canteen, and gave him what he would drink. Before we parted he told me, all the Recruits were to go out in the Morning, and the Officer would be there in order to ſee how they all performed. I told him, I certainly would be there, that they might

might ſee my Performance, it being the firſt time that I had been out with them. As ſoon as the Officers appeared, the Adjutant perceived me and ſaid to the Corporal, why do you ſuffer that Man to be with thoſe aukward Dogs, and called me in this manner, *Sir Cloudſley come here.* I obeyed his Command, and after he had aſked me ſeveral Queſtions, which I very readily reſolv'd, he ſaid, *I have a Notion you can do your Exerciſe.* I told him, *I thought it my Duty to be conformable to the Will of the Corporal, notwithſtanding I had ſome Idea of the Thing; but to pleaſe the Ignorant, I came into their Meaſures.* With that he deſired to ſee ſome of my Performance. Being a very briſk Man he acted with his Cane, and deſired I would obſerve his Motions and follow him. After I had ſo done, he deſired I would go through it alone, accordingly I did; and with more Life and Vigor than before. He finding that, deſired the Corporal would not let me me go out, but when the Battalion went. So I took my farewel of accompanying the Recruits to exerciſe any longer. But ſtill I was for bringing them forward as much as poſſibly I could, for I took them all by turns, and gave them a private Leſſon unknown to any but myſelf, and I found that did in ſome meaſure improve myſelf, by giving me the true Air that a Soldier ſhould have.

One Day I chanced to eſpy the Major and my Captain, as they were walking upon the Parade, as I was diverting myſelf with ſome of the Recruits. Soon after, I heard a Voice call me,

me by my Name, though I could not distinguish whose it was at first. But the second Call I perceived it was the Captain's. With that I ran to him; and as soon as I appeared before him, he spoke to the Major, and said, *this is the Man the Adjutant told us of.* The Major said, *he hoped I would turn out a good Man, and according to my Behaviour I should be preferr'd.* With that I said, *Gentlemen, you will find, that all my Proceedings will be deserving if Fortune favours me.* I gave them the Oeconomy of my Behaviour in the Sea Service, with which they were highly diverted, and each gave me a double Shilling. Though at that time I had Money enough, yet I thought it would be a piece of Rudeness to refuse a Gentleman's Kindness, therefore I accepted it. But nothing vexed me, but being grudged it by the Recruits, which I found out by their saying one to another; *when will the Captain serve us so?* On my hearing that, I said to them, *Come, my Boys, the Major and Captain have given us something in order to make ourselves merry withal. Therefore by Consent let us all go and drink their Healths.* I did this to prevent their imagining that the Officers had not as much regard for them as for me, at least I endeavoured to make it appear so to them: For I was always afraid of the evil Influence of Jealousy, which renders Mankind capable of performing every Thing that is bad: And it was ever my Study to prevent it's bad Effects. Officers, especially, ought to be careful of disgusting those under their Command, by arbi-

trary

trary Prejudices againſt one more than another, as it often proves fatal to them in time of Action. But if all Mankind was of my Mind, there would not be ſuch Slaughter amongſt the Officers as there ſometimes is. I will aver, a good Officer I priſed as the Apple of my Eye, and I have often expoſed my own Body to the Shot, with a View to ſave a good Commander, eſpecially when I have found them ſomewhat ſlow to enter upon Action; for, they were not always diſpoſed to be vigorous till after the ſecond or third fire. Then indeed none ſo active as they. Providence has directed me to aid and aſſiſt Thouſands, and I was proud of doing a good Office to my Superiors, as well as to my Inferiors. Thus I fought from a good Principle, and had the good Fortune to eſcape all Dangers, as the Reader will find.

In the Spring, we marched from *Ghent*, to a certain Place where we encamped, I think it was about a League from *Ulcey*, though we continued there no longer than one Night, and in the Morning had Orders to march to *Auterdam*, a place of Rendezvous. While we continued there, I was prodigiouſly active in inventing ſome new Project or other, and one in Particular I remember well. As there was a general Complaint amongſt our Men for want of Liquor, I conſulted within myſelf, how I might produce ſomething unexpectedly. When my Conſultation was over, I was fully determined to uſe the utmoſt of my Endeavour to bring my Intentions to Perfection, which was

as

as follows. I prevailed upon ſome of Sir *Richard Temple*'s Men to go along with me, to prevent our Men ſuſpecting what Stratagem I had faln on for their Relief. I thought the more unexpected it was, the more kindly it would be received, and it would give more Pleaſure in the End to keep them in Suſpence for ſome Time. For theſe Reaſons I thought it prudent not to let any of our Men know my Intentions, except thoſe I took with me. All the other I excluded from the Secret as the Reader will find. I marched with the aforeſaid Sir *Richard Temple*'s Men, to a certain Place of the River, where I jumped in. The clear Bottom deceived me greatly, but I made ſhift to ford it, though my Head did not appear above one Inch upon the Surface of the Water. All the other Men ſaid they would ſee me over before they would attempt it, and when I had got over, they were intimidated till Shame got the better of their Fear, for they were much taller Men than I. None of us could ſwim, which was a Diſadvantage to us at that Juncture of Time: Though we had the good Fortune to get over ſafe but with ſome Difficulty. But the Thoughts, or the Sight of ſome Houſes on that ſide, ſtifled every Thought of dangerous Obſtructions in our way. At a diſtance the Houſes appeared as if they would produce ſomething good, or at leaſt what our Men much wanted. We went to ſeveral and uſed them ſo civilly, that they were not under any Apprehenſions of what we wanted. But I did that with a View to ſee what Stock

of Liquor they had. Then I came round to the firſt I went to, and demanded a Barrel of Beer. I think the Veſſel might contain about fifty Gallons, *Wincheſter* Meaſure. The People were unwilling to part with it, but I told them I thought they could very well ſpare one out of ſo many, and after a pretty long Conference, they complied with our Requeſt and were extremely civil. But all their Care was, how we ſhould carry it. I told them I would go to one Houſe more, and call as we came back. Yet I thought it would be prudent to let one Man ſtay and watch it, leſt they ſhould put any Thing in it, that might be pernicious and deſtructive to us. Thus I kept a watchful Eye over them, to prevent the evil Influence of their Envy. For I was not ſure but they might envenom the Whole, without any Remorſe of Conſcience. And I thought it a Thing of ſo great Conſequence that we could not be too careful. I found they had ſome Suſpicion of my Jealouſy, and it cauſed them to ſay more than was agreeable; but I did not mind their ill Words. I thought there was a Duty incumbent upon me ſteadily to proſecute what I had undertaken, without minding other Perſons Reflections. By that Means I was very Illuſtrious amongſt Men of my Profeſſion, and had the Eſteem and Approbation of my Superiors, as the Reader will find, after this Stratagem is over. When we left the Houſe, I deſired the Man would obſerve my Commands while I went to Viſit another. When we came there,

the

the People were ſeemingly in a Quandary, and ſomewhat ſurpriſed. Therefore I ſaid, *Let nothing daunt you, for we are not come with an Intent to do you an Injury; but for what I am certain you will not deny us. A Barrel of the ſame Beer we taſted before will be very acceptable; as you have a ſufficient Quantity, you will hardly miſs that.* Whether it was through Fear or Aſtoniſhment, I cannot ſay, but they very readily granted our Requeſt, and I believe they would have given us any Thing. But I abominate an unreaſonable Creature; therefore I would not ſuffer any one to do an ill Thing in my Company. Moſt of them knew my Temper ſo well that they ſeldom attempted to do any Thing but what I approved of, and one may needs think it was a great Pleaſure to me to ſee them all ſo condeſcending. Even all I converſed with were very ſubmiſſive, and I took Delight in making up their Deficiencies. Yea at that Time I valued my Station preferable to that of a commiſſioned Officer: So that I was never deſirous of any other Preferment, than what Fortune would oblige me to receive by flying into my Arms. And in truth, one ſeldom hears of any Preferment without earneſt Applications and Solicitations, but that was contrary to my Nature, for my Employment and Study were chiefly amongſt the Commonalty, in redreſſing Grievances, and by ſo doing I gained great Applauſe, as you will find in the whole Courſe of my Life.

But

But I think it will be requiſite to acquaint the World, how I contrived to bring the two Veſſels of Beer to our Regiment. Firſt of all, we borrowed ſome Cords, but with an intent never to return them again, though the People very readily furniſhed us with what I thought ſufficient. Then we got both Veſſels together and rolled them down to the River ſide. Here we made uſe of our Cords, and tied them both together and ſet them afloat. I had a long Rope in my Hand, and others had long Poles to keep it from the Bank ſide. This was our Method of drawing it along the Water, till we came as far as it was neceſſary. Then I encouraged the Men by ſaying that they were gallant Men and afraid of nothing, and it ſo appeared; for they all got into the Water, though it was above their Depth in ſome places; but they all ſtruggled through, and when they were upon the other ſide, I threw the Rope over ſo as they might pull it, and I jumped acroſs the Veſſels, and in this manner got over upon dry Land. When I was over, I found there was ſome Difficulty in getting the Veſſels out of the Water, but at laſt I invented a Thing that did it very eaſily. I drove two Pieces of Wood into the Earth and tied two Ropes to them, then I put the Ropes under the Veſſels and brought them over the Middle of each, and with great care forewarned the Men to pull ſteady. They obſerved my Directions, and it anſwered my Intent. Then we had not far to go before we

came to our Regiment, where we had Spectators enough to see what we had got.

Then I said to the Men that were my Assistants, take one Vessel and dispose of it as you think proper. With that they sold it for Threepence a Feltmate, a Measure that contains about three Pints *English*, and when they had disposed of all theirs, I thought proper to dispose of mine, in this manner; I gave every Man that thought it worth coming after, as much as he could conveniently drink, and when I had so done desired they would fetch their Canteens, as we were to march on the Morrow. I told them that I thought it would be very acceptable upon the March, and while I was filling their Canteens, there came two Officers up to me, and asked me several Questions which I readily resolved, and they were highly diverted to see my Transaction; and when they left me they said one to the other, that Man has a Paternal Love and his Intentions are just. I could not help thinking it was saying a great deal of me, but I knew at that time that a Word from me, had as much Influence over the Men, as any Officers Orders belonging to our Regiment. More than that, if I held up my Hands they knew what it meant; and I could have Hundreds to obey my Command by a word speaking. Therefore no one can conceive, the Happiness that I concealed in my own Breast. Nay, if they had given me a Company I don't think it would have been any Addition to my Joy, as it

was in a ſuperlative Degree. For I would not have the World think that Happineſs conſiſts altogether in ſuch a Sphere of Dignity, as Preferment, which certainly is due to none but thoſe that deſerve it. I cenſure no Man; only give me leave to ſpeak the true Sentiments of my Heart, before I go any farther; I was as happy in my Station, and enjoyed as much Peace and Satisfaction in my own Breaſt, as poſſibly the Duke of *Marlborough* could in his. No Man was ſuperior to me in that, or happier than I was. I can challenge the whole Globe, upon the ſame.

CHAP. XX.

The Author leaves Autredam, *and marches to* Bruſſels: *The manner of his being taken Priſoner by the* French *and his Eſcape from them.*

AS I have acquainted the World of the true Diſpoſition of my Heart, and the Oeconomy of my Behaviour hitherto, I ſhall now proceed forward to the reſt of my Actions. The Relation is my own, and I never will diſown any Fact contained in it; but I ſhall receive an additional Comfort to my Veracity if I live to ſee, and anſwer all the Objections and Aſperſions caſt upon my Reputation. But as to my Language I hope the Reader will be candid enough to excuſe it; and have no room to diſlike my Actions, as they were performed with Fervency, as he will find.

When we left *Autredam*, we marched in the Road for *Bruſſels*, and when we came under the Walls it rained prodigiouſly. Though it was in the Night our Men were not in the leaſt diſcouraged, and at the Dawn of the Day we were in hopes the Rain would ceaſe. But it continued with the ſame Conſtancy as before. I was pleaſed to ſee our Men were not in the leaſt diſheartened, and it plainly appeared ſo. For we had made a very expeditious March, and it was requiſite ſo to do, as the *French* were upon a direct Line, and we had a half Moon to go round; and when ſo there is no halting till we have accompliſhed our Intent, and as good Luck would have it we did ſo. But at the ſame time Night and Day were our Companions: Yet we gloried in our Bravery and were all animated to a great Degree, ſo that we prevented the *French* of the Ground at *Maldoar*. Had we not we ſhould have loſt a very plentiful Encampment, where all Kinds of Proviſion were reaſonable enough, which ſuited moſt of our Men beſt.

At the time of Harveſt, I was upon Guard at the Duke of *Marlborough*'s Quarters, and at that Juncture of Time, there were Orders to go a foraging for the Duke. I remember well, we went beyond *Tarlemount*, and entred into a Field of Wheat, where ſome were bound and ſome unbound. Though had it all been in Sheaves, we ſhould have been more expeditious than we were. Notwithſtanding the Condition it was in, we loaded ten Waggons in leſs then an Hour;

and

and when we had ſo done, as we were coming from that Place, at a narrow Paſs there were ſome Diſputes aroſe, and they were determined we ſhould not come that way. Upon this, I went up to them and ſaid, *Gentlemen, I hope you will not refuſe this Forage.* They aſked me, *whoſe it was?* I told them, then they changed their Notes and ſaid paſs here *Marlborough*, all is welcome that belongs to him. I was ſenſible that his Name would have ſome Influence over them, knowing that never a Man in the known World bore ſuch an extenſive Character as he did. I have often ſaid to our Men, by way of Encouragement, *that the Name of him is better than ten thouſand Men*; and it was very juſtly obſerved. For it ſtruck a Terror wherever it went, and it was of a great Extent. But yet, at the ſame time his Enemies loved him for his good Uſage. I muſt needs confeſs, that the known World could not produce a Man endu'd or capable of more Humanity than he was, and all Honour was due to him, for what he promiſed he would perform, and for his Wiſdom and extenſive Goodneſs, God proſpered all his Undertakings and Endeavours. I could ſee it, daily, therefore I thought it my Duty to intimate it to others, leſt they ſhould any ways be intimidated by any Notions whatſoever, that might be hurtful to us.

When we left *Meldoar* we marched all Night for *Aurta* where we encamped at a Diſtance, and to the beſt of my Knowledge, when we were come to the Ground appointed for the

ſaid Camp, it was about twelve o'Clock. Then every Man was to get ſomething to lye upon, in order to keep him from the Surface of the Earth. I ſpy'd at a great diſtance a Boor's Houſe. With that my Comrade and I agreed to go both together, thinking to get ſome Straw, but were prevented as you will find: For my Companion was deprived of his Life, by the Partiſan Party, and I very fortunately eſcaped loſing mine. I impute my Preſervation to Providence, as they flaſh'd in the Pan at me. As it was ſo ordered, I was obliged to ſurrender and put myſelf under their Juriſdiction, till Opportunity would ſerve, to make my Eſcape. Which I did as prudent as I could, by giving way to all their Propoſals. Though I was ſo condeſcending, they behaved to me in a barbarous, cruel and inhuman Manner. In the firſt place, two Men, in whoſe Cuſtody I was left, took my Waiſtcoat from me, and likewiſe deprived me of all I had in my Pockets. Nothing vex'd me, but their taking from me a Silver Snuff-box, in which my Wife's Picture was concealed. That in ſome Meaſure would have render'd me capable of deſtroying them, had I been the leaſt armed in Life, as I began to be reſolute, for they punch'd me with their Firelocks till I began to be very ſore and feeble from the Effect of their Blows. But I thought it in vain to contend with thoſe Villains, being unarmed, and nothing on but my Shirt to ſkreen me from their Cruelty. As the Partiſan Party had left me to the care of thoſe two Men, I believe they

did

did not think that I was a human Creature by their Uſage, for I thought they had given me ſufficient, though I found it otherways. For when they had taken me into a thick place in the Wood, they threw me down, and took all the Money out of my Breeches Pockets. I think it was about twenty two double Shillings they had taken from me, and that would not ſatisfy them, but they were for taking the Buckles out of my Shoes. Thoſe I was unwilling to part from, therefore I made ſome Reſiſtance till I was almoſt ſpent, through the Weight of their Fire-locks over all parts of my Body. Even my poor Head was beat to a Mummy, that it was ſwelled as big as two Heads. The Party hearing me, ſent the Corporal, and as ſoon as he came he was in a violent Rage with them, for their ill Uſage. Then he ſaid to me, *Get up Countryman, a Hair of your Head ſhall not be wronged.* I was ſcarce able to make him an Anſwer, but yet I did as well as I could, though I was exceſſively low ſpirited, and ſcarce able to ſtand on my Legs. But I was like a Cock that crows as long as he can. Therefore I ſaid, Sir, I ſhould not have valued my Hair, had they not bruiſed my Fleſh, and not only that, but taken my Money and Snuff-box, nay they would have deprived me of my Life, had not you come at this Juncture. The Corporal ſeemingly had ſome Humanity in him. I underſtood he meant they were as bad as their Collectors or Highwaymen that can't be contented with Money but muſt bereave People of their Lives,

which I think intolerable. I could perceive what he ſaid to them had a great Influence over them, and put them in a panick Fear. Then I thought there was a Duty incumbent on me, to render him Thanks for his Civilities.

When I had ſo done, they took me to the Party; and the Officer aſked, *Whether I was willing to ſerve my own King?* I told him, *I would do any thing rather than lye Priſoner; but yet I am afraid I ſhall be but of little Service to any, after the barbarous Uſage I have received from the Hands of thoſe two Villains.* He deſired to know their Cruelty. Then I ſaid, *Sir, I will tell you my Grievance. If you would be pleaſed to reſtore to me the leaſt Glimpſe of your Favour, I beg you to order thoſe Men to return what they very poſſibly may call their own.* With that he began to talk to them more than I could underſtand. But they very readily gave me all they had taken from me. Then I ſaid, *Sir, after they had taken this from me, they bruiſed me in this Manner, that I am ſcarce able to lye, walk, or ſtand; and not able to put my Hands ſo high as my Head.* I underſtood that he deſired I would pull off my Shirt; therefore I did, and was ſurpriſed myſelf, to ſee my Fleſh appear like a Negro's. The Officer, ſeeing what a Condition I was in, gave Orders immediately that they ſhould be ſecured. With that they were diſarmed and taken away by a File of Muſketeers. I muſt needs own, the Officer was extremely civil, and hoped I might do well again, and that I ſhould not want

want for Encouragement, if I would continue with them. Then he ordered me what I had a Mind to eat. It being at a Boor's Houſe, I had a Mind to have ſome new Milk turned into a Poſſet. I thought that might ſomewhat revive me, as I felt myſelf prodigiouſly feeble. I found myſelf ſick at the Heart, and was in a great Agony; therefore I thought hot Suppings would be beſt to nouriſh the inward Man, and drive out any thing that might be corruptible by the Influence of thoſe Blows. The Method I took I believe was my Preſervation; for I often thought that I was juſt going to expire. Though after I had eaten, I began to be chearful; and the Officer, ſeeing I was a little more lively than before, clapped me on the Back, and ſaid, *Come, never fear, you will do again, I don't doubt.* And they all were very jocular one with another. But I was prodigiouſly thoughtful as we walked from that Place, contriving how I might make my Eſcape from their Hands. Being exceſſively ſore and feeble, I began to reflect with myſelf, that their Cruelty was owing to my Obſtinacy, in not giving Way to all their unreaſonable Commands; which a Man ought to do, when environed round by ſuch inhuman Creatures, who have no Remorſe of Conſcience, or Compaſſion for any of our Religion; but would ſacrifice us all, if in their Power. As I was thinking, they eſpied three more Men, whom they took Priſoners; and had I not been there, they would have ſhot at them; but my ſaying, *Don't ſhoot them,*

them, it will be much better to preſerve their Lives, by aiming at ſomething elſe; and I don't queſtion but it will intimidate them to ſuch a Degree, that they will ſurrender, and readily come into your Meaſures, had ſome Influence on them, and reſtrained them from acting like our *Engliſh* Sportſmen, who let fly at the Game as ſoon as it appears. I can compare it to nothing elſe, as they gave us no Quarter. And I uſed to ſay, they were like Foxes ſeeking their Prey, but yet afraid when they met any, to rencounter with them. They are Men that will ſhew their Dexterity upon thoſe that have nothing to defend themſelves. Their Valour conſiſts in that only: For I found out their Natures preſently; and was ſurpriſed to find Mankind could be guilty of ſuch Inhumanity.

I grew very impatient e'er I deſerted them, but I began to pleaſe myſelf with the Thoughts, that they would not in the leaſt ſuſpect my making my Eſcape, as I was almoſt diſabled. As we were marching from one Place to another, all in the Evening, of a ſudden, I heard the Tattoo of the *Engliſh* Army beat. That animated me to ſuch a Degree, that I could ſcarce feel the Ground I walked upon; though I kept my Joy to myſelf. For I was determined in my own Mind to fly from the *French*, as ſoon as I ſaw an Opportunity, or a convenient Place, let the Conſequence be what it would; and accordingly I did. As we were in a Wood, I accidentally ſaw a Path upon the right, though I was at firſt afraid to venture into

into it. But Courage ſoon darted into me, and I ran for my dear Life. They did not ſo much as fire one Piece after me; by which I found they did not perceive me; it being ſo exceſſive dark amongſt the Trees. I think I ran almoſt two Miles in the Wood, and at laſt very fortunately came upon the right of the *Engliſh* Line. As I appeared, the Sentinel belonging to our Allies advanced Guard immediately challenged me, and obliged me to ſtand. I very readily complied. Then he called a Corporal; and when he came, he bid me advance, and obliged me to follow his Horſe as cloſe to his Tail as I could conveniently walk. Behind me there was another with his drawn broad Sword in his Hand, and that was the Method they took to conduct me to the grand Guard. When they had ſo done, the Officers examined me before I could be admitted to go any farther. I made them as ſenſible of my Condition as I could, which gave them ſome Satisfaction. So when I had explained myſelf in every Particular as well as I could, they gave Orders for a File of Muſketeers to convey me to the Quarter Guard. When I came there, I ſo intimated to the Officer, that I had paſt all my Examinations, and all my Conveyances, that I was exempted from any farther Interruption: I had anſwered when challenged, and I thought that was ſufficient. My Tongue was in a perpetual Motion, till I came to *Webb*'s Regiment; for the Flank and Quarter Guard were continually challenging me. The Multiplicity of Words made me ſo hoarſe,

hoarſe, that I was obliged to evacuate, to prevent any Diſputes that frequently ariſe from the unthinking Man. Though I was much jaded before I could enjoy the Sight of our Regiment, I have often thought that my Nature was indefatigable. I had Cauſe enough to complain at that Juncture; but yet I was pleaſed in my own Mind, to think that I was arrived, though with ſome Difficulty, and in great Agony. When I came to the Regiment I belonged to, they were all ſeemingly in high Spirits at my Return; eſpecially thoſe that had any Knowledge of me. I was ſurpriſed to ſee that general Delectation for ſo inſignificant a Thing as me. After they had congratulated one another upon my Return, they told me, they heard my Voice above a Mile. Then the Serjeant, belonging to the Company I was in, deſired that I would go with him to the Captain; and when I came to his Tent, the Serjeant told him that I was come back. With that he deſired I would walk in; and when I appeared before him, he aſked me ſeveral Queſtions. Then I was obliged to diſcover the Enemy's barbarous Uſage of me. He told me, it was well they did not bereave me of my Life; and perceiving a Change in me, gave me a large Glaſs of Wine, and deſired I would go to my Tent, and lap myſelf up warm; for by ſo doing I might enjoy my perfect Health again. Likewiſe he ſaid he would talk to the Colonel on the Morrow about my Adventures.

Juſt

Juſt as I parted from the Captain, there was a poor Fellow came running up to me, ſeemingly ſtruck with Fear in ſuch a manner, that it was inſupportable and he could ſcarce utter his Words: Yet I preſently underſtood what he meant. Wherefore I told him that the young Man that was with me unfortunately loſt his Life, and he was quite dead before I left him, for I was not a Yard from him when he dropt. Then I found he wanted me to deſcribe his Perſon, and when I had ſo done, he ſaid, *it was my Brother.* He was tormented with exceſſive Grief, and wept ſo prodigiouſly that I thought I ſhould never have been able to have pacified him. Yet I uſed the utmoſt of my Endeavours to bring him to underſtand, that all Fleſh was born to die, and at laſt my Applications had ſome Influence on him, and he was convinced what I ſaid was right. I was glad to ſee my Diſcourſe had it's deſired Effect, but at the ſame time I was very unfit to expoſe my Body to the cold; but it was not my Nature to leave any one in Agony, when in my Power to relieve them. Therefore, I thought there was a Duty incumbent upon me to unwrap or unfold my Sentiments, when required.

It is no Advantage to any one to bury their Talents in the Ground, and yet there are thouſands, who ſcorn to have any Converſation with their Inferiors; but I think it is an Act of Prudence, to ſhew their Affability, let a Man be in the higheſt Degree of Dignity. They little

think what Encouragement it gives the Commonalty of Mankind; if they did, they would not carry themſelves ſo ſtiff, nor thirſt after that ambitious overrating Spirit; or that Diabolical Nature that increaſeth from a ſmall Spark of Encouragement: Therefore if a Man would but reflect with himſelf, I dare ſay he would find it as I have obſerved. Though I think it impoſſible for a Man to be inſenſible of theſe my Sentiments, even the meaneſt Capacity in Life, if they indulge a calm Reflection. But if they are above looking upon the Ground, it is hard to diſtinguiſh the different Produce that proceedeth from it. Now the Man that gives true Attention can diſcern the different Natures of every thing that ſpringeth forth. O how ſweet, nay it cauſed in me inſuperable Delight, when I had reſtrained them from a bad Inclination! I took Delight in ſo doing. The poor Man for the Loſs of his Brother would have laid violent Hands upon himſelf, had not I prevented him, therefore I rejoiced that what I ſaid had ſo good an Effect. And if what I could ſay, had that Influence, what muſt Men of profound Knowledge and Experience have done? Though I will leave the World to reflect a little, while I go to my Tent in order to reſt myſelf.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXI.

Account of the battle of Oudenard; *and of forcing the* French *Lines by the Duke of* Argyle: *The Author goes into Quarters with an account of their Oeconomy in the Barracks: Encomiums on the good Conduct of the Generals of the Allies: End of the Campaign in* 1707.

WHEN I came there, I laid myſelf down, and I had but juſt laid my Eyes together, before I heard the General beat, with that I got up, and looked about me, and it was not long after that before they beat to Arms or the Troſs, and marched ſoon after. The Officers would have had me to have ſtaid behind and come up with their Baggage, but I begged they would excuſe me, and let me go with the Regiment, ſo long as I had Hand or Limb to help myſelf. Thoſe Words prevailed upon them to let me go. I gratefully acknowledged it as a Favour that was I not excluded, but admitted to go with my Brother Soldiers. I think it was a little after two in the Morning before we left the Camp, and very late before we came to the Ground marked out for us that Night. In the Morning early we marched for *Oudenard*, where we had Buſineſs enough as it fell out; but the Day being far ſpent, and the Night drawing near, and thick and cloudy withal, prevented us doing a great deal more Execution than we did; though we had the Advantage

tage of them. You will find, the Regiment I belonged to took Part of the Brigade; but I could not help pleaſing myſelf at our Appearance. The *French* were very merry with their Drums and Pipes, who made a great Harmony; but we ſoon changed their muſical and harmonical Notes, by the Salute of a warm Fire, that made great Havock amongſt them, and put them into great Confuſion. I could not help thinking it was owing to God's providential Power that we got the better of them, as they had the Advantage of us in the Ground, and likewiſe were ſuperior in Number; which are two great Articles. Beſides, we had juſt come off a long March, which was more extraordinary. But we beat them till we obliged them to relinquiſh all their Poſts, and retire in great Haſte; though we were not in a Capacity to follow them; but continued there in order to bury our Dead on the Morrow.

But here I think proper to tell you how we diſpoſed of the Priſoners. We took them to *Oudenard*; but when we firſt took them, there happened to be an obſtinate *Frenchman* that reſiſted, and refuſed to lay down his Arms; though he was juſt before the Colour Platoon. One Enſign *Turner*, a very active young Man, therefore ran up to him, with the Colours in his Hand, and obliged him to lay his Arms down by Violence, though he unfortunately broke the Colours about a Foot, and it was done by the Buckle of his Pouch. But the *Frenchman* for his Obſtinacy was cloſely confined.

An-

Another Thing I was under a great Concern for was, that the Lieutenant, who belonged to the Company that I did, was ſhot through the Head. I had Reaſon ſufficient to be concerned; for he was a particular Friend of mine; and I believe if he had lived, I might poſſibly have received a great many Favours; for as he ſpoke with a great deal of Sincerity, I think one might have confided in him. He ſeemingly was a Man that had a great deal of Sagacity, which I thought might have turned out greatly to our Advantage; and we could very ill ſpare ſuch Men, eſpecially at that critical Juncture. I was ſtruck ſo much that I could not reſt in my Mind, neither could I ſleep though I wanted Reſt, as I was not recovered of the ill Uſage which I had received from the *French* before. But by this I received no Damage at all, only was in Pain for my Fellow-Creatures, eſpecially in the Morning when I came to viſit the Dead, in order to bury them.

I found, the Number of the Enemy's ſlain exceeded ours; and this pleaſed me much, as it was an undeniable Proof of our having got the Victory. However, I was a little ſurpriſed to ſee that the *Daniſh* Guards had been cut off in ſuch a Manner as they were. I remember well, that they filled a very long Ditch; and we were obliged to lay them Heads and Points, or double; ſo that there was a large Piece of Ground enriched with human Blood, beſides great Quantities of dead and wounded that were carried into Houſes. I had a Mind to ſee

all I could; but it would have made a Heart of Flint bleed, to ſee and hear the bitter Groans of thoſe that were juſt expiring.

When I had ſeen all I could, I chanced to eſpy, at a great Diſtance, a Horſe amongſt the ſtanding Corn. With that I made up to it, and took my Garters off, as he appeared to be a Horſe worth eight or ten Piſtoles. But when I came to examine him, he was not worth one, for he was ſhot in the Thigh; and I did not think myſelf Farrier ſufficient, or good enough, to cure him. Therefore I left him, that he might paſs the Examination of others that might have more Skill than me. In the Evening I found there were Detachments of our Army, in Number Thirty Thouſand Men, allotted, in order to attack the *French* Lines, under the Command of the Duke of *Argyll*. We marched all Night. Our Generals behaved with a great deal of Conduct in that Expedition; for they ſent the Artillery before, and all their Appurtenances fitting for our Uſe, that they might be ready at our Appearance. I was one of the firſt upon Command, and in the Front. We ſlung our Firelocks, and every Man had a Shovel in his Hand; and when we came to the Place appointed, we ran up upon their Works. It was like running up the Side of a Houſe. When we got to the Top, we began to throw it down as faſt as we could, in order to make Way for the Army. Here I could not help pleaſing myſelf to ſee how the *French* ran from their Watchhouſes, in ſuch

great Haſte, as if they endeavoured to make their Eſcape, leſt any thing ſhould befal them; for had they ſtaid, there was great Likelihood they would have had their Heads broke. Then I ſaid to our Men, *Look yonder, we have ſurpriſed them, and they are ſtruck with a panick Fear already; therefore let us make Way that we may follow them.* I muſt needs ſay, we were not long before we had made the Ground fitting for our Army to march on: So we made ourſelves Maſter of the Line without any Oppoſition at all.

When we had accompliſhed our Intent, we were all very well ſatisfied, and thought Reſt would be very agreeable after our long Fatigue. Therefore we conſented to lye down on our Arms. After we had refreſhed ourſelves with moderate Sleep, my Comrade began to be very hungry; at leaſt he made great Complaints, and ſaid, he was determined to go and ſee what that Part of the World would afford him. With that he went by himſelf; but I having a great Value for the Man, and afraid leſt any Accident ſhould happen to him, went after him, but could not find him for a conſiderable Time, though I made as ſtrict an Inquiſition as I could, but received no Tidings of him; therefore I was vexed in my own Mind, that I did not go along with him. At laſt I accidentally met with him by turning to the right, and I could diſcern he was driving ſomething before him, but could not diſtinguiſh what it was, till I came near him. Then I found he had got a

large Lamb, but he had tied his Garters together, and likewiſe tied them to his Leg. I told him, I thought it was a very uncommon Way of driving a Sheep or Lamb; therefore ſaid, Come let me learn you a better Method than this; for this is like driving a Pig; but a Lamb requires to be carried. With that I tied his Legs together, and threw him over my Shoulders. But as the Man's Name was *James Lamb*, I purpoſed a great deal of Mirth when we came to the Company, though I did not acquaint him of my Intentions, but kept my Intentions as cloſe as I could, till we came there. Then I obſerved in this Manner, and ſaid, *Gentlemen, this Day ſomething extraordinary has happened to us, it will be the World's Wonder.* They could not imagine what I meant, but the ſecond Intimation gave them a true Idea of it, which was in this Manner. *Gentlemen, there never was more Likelihood of Plenty, than when one Lamb produces another; we certainly ſhall have a great Produce in Time, if we digeſt this agreeably.* Upon theſe Words, the Lamb was taken to the Slaughterer's, and my Comrade had ſcarce Patience for it to be cold, after it was killed. Wherefore I thought it would ſuffice his Appetite, by giving him the Fry to eat; though he was under ſome Apprehenſions that I intended to give the biggeſt Part of it away. I was ſenſible that would not be altogether agreeable to him, as he was of a covetous Diſpoſition, quite contrary to my Nature. Therefore I kept him in Suſpence, and would not ſa-

tisfy him of the full Intention of my Heart, nor no one that was guilty of ſuch Voracity. I found by Experience, that the chief Produce of Greedineſs and Gluttony was Indolence; therefore I would never encourage any one that Way inclined. On the Morrow, I took half the Lamb and roaſted it; and invited whom I thought fit; and we made a very plentiful Meal. Likewiſe after it we were exceſſively merry in drinking Succeſs to the Lamb, hoping that it might produce one every Week. The *Lamb* was ſtruck dumb, and would not ſpeak one Word for a conſiderable Time. Therefore it appeared to me as if we ſhould not be any the better for the next: But I was glad to ſee that he had ſuch Conduct in him, not to be guilty of Infamy, nor any thing that was baſe: And I extolled him for his Affability. Then he became one of us, and was as jocoſe as the beſt of us. So his Countenance was ſoon changed from an ill natured Look to every Thing that was pleaſant and agreeable. So I think he deſerved to be commended, and every one, that doth not carry Reſentment to ſuch an Extremity, as to harbour Malice, or any Malignity whatſoever. The Method I took, was to acknowledge their Virtues, and encourage them to perſevere in Good. So ever after, inſtead of giving Way to the beforementioned Sullenneſs, he would often be making ſome Kind of Jeſt about the Lamb; therefore he went by the Name, *James Lamb has loſt the Lamb.* It was given him by his own Approbation. Thus

there was nothing but Mirth, and ſome Feat of Activity or other, during the Time of our Continuance at that Ground; eſpecially at our leiſure Moments, when Time would permit.

When we left that Ground, we marched to a beautiful Plain, where we adorned our Camp with Boughs and Flowers, that made it as pleaſant as a Nobleman's Garden in *England.* We did it very dexterouſly, in ſuch a Manner, that it ſkreened us from the Heat of the Sun. And I very well remember, it was exceſſively hot at that Time. But we were well fortified againſt it; for you could ſcarce perceive any ſuch Thing as a Tent, for Crowns and Garlands, which were made in a magnificent Manner. After we had taken ſuch Pains, thinking to have a long Continuance to enjoy the Fruits of our Labour, and that pleaſant Situation; I muſt needs confeſs, we had not the Opportunity of embracing the like, during the whole Campaign. This made us the more deſirous of ſtaying. Though when our Commander ſays the Word, it muſt be obeyed without Control, yet it was my Happineſs to have no craving Deſire after any thing; I was ready to relinquiſh every Enjoyment, and comply with their Will and Pleaſure. Though I was determined that nothing ſhould obſtruct me from my Duty and Loyalty, yet at the ſame Time, I reckoned it a peculiar Advantage, to meet with no tempting Pleaſure to ſhake this my Reſolution, or prevent me from vigorouſly exerting myſelf, as long as I had Breath, by endeavouring

ing to maintain a juſt Cauſe: And the Reader will find, that I ſteadily purſued this Point, ſo long as there was any Employment for me; while Thouſands could not bear the Hardſhip, but the firſt Opportunity they had, would endeavour to ſhelter themſelves, and be backward of their Duty, and would fly from Truth, for the Sake of Oppoſition, even for the leaſt Glimpſe of Encouragement. I call theſe Rebels in Nature, and not worthy of the Bleſſings the Almighty has vouchſafed to this World.

Though I acknowledge our marching was very expeditious, and a great Fatigue to ſome Men, yet I think thoſe that won't endeavour their own Preſervation, and that of their Country, deſerve to be buried alive. For my own Part, I never ſaw any of our Infantry, that could outdo me in marching; and when in Health, I always thought myſelf indefatigable, till *Swiney*'s Day in *March*, and then, I muſt needs own, I began to be Leg-weary. But there was Cauſe enough to complain. I remember the greateſt Part of the *Welch* Fuſileers marched without Shoes. The exceſſive Rain, that accompanied us that Day, had put all the Infantry into ſo great Diſorder, that it rendered them unfit for marching for a conſiderable Time after. It had no leſs Effect upon the Cavalry; for many were obliged to diſmount, and lead their Horſes in their Hands. Then I began to think our Station was preferable to theirs; though our Regiment had Orders to march a League beyond the reſt of the Army, in order

to cover the General's Quarters. After we had received theſe Orders, there were not above a Hundred Men to bring up the Colours of our Regiment, and Neceſſity obliged me to mount the Quarter Guard. Likewiſe Duty was required of me as ſoon as I came in. But you muſt needs think it was very uncomfortable, after I had borne the Severity of the Weather, to ſtand with not ſo much as one dry Thread upon my Back, and wet Garments that ſtruck exceſſively cold. But I nouriſhed the inward Man by drinking Brandy, and thus prevented the ill Effects that might have proceeded from that Unpleaſantneſs. I don't think the Day will ever be forgot amongſt old Soldiers: At leaſt they may allow me to quicken their Memory, by acquainting them that General *Ingoldſby* led us that Day; and we ſet it aſide, as a very remarkable one.

In this Place we ſtaid till ſuch Time as both Man and Horſe had recovered the Fatigue of our expeditious March; or at leaſt, our commanding Generals thought that Houſes would be much more agreeable than Huts or Tents, either for Man or Beaſt: Therefore when we left that Ground, our Generals began to think of the Gariſons; and we marched to a Place within a League of *Courtray*, where we halted ſome Time; though in daily Expectation of marching nearer Gariſon; therefore it prevented us making the Preparation we ſhould, had we imagined our Time would have been longer. But in this Reſpect we acted prudently;

ly; for our Continuance was but a very few Days, and from thence our Troops were drawn towards *Ulcey*, where we halted; and it being exceſſive cold, we made ourſelves little Huts to ſkreen us from the Severity of the Weather; though it was not long before the Army began to diſperſe themſelves. I found by their ſeparating, it was done in order to go into Gariſon. Any one may think it would be moſt agreeable at that Time of Year, it was about *All Saints*, before our Officers went to *Ghent*, in order to draw for Quarters. We were about five Leagues from *Ghent*, and it was not long before we received good News; that was, that our Quarters were to be in the *Spaniſh* Caſtle. This gave us a great deal of Pleaſure, knowing the Quarters differed much.

When we came there, finding that the Barrack I was to be in had four Beds, we managed with a great deal of Conduct and Diſcretion, and took it by Turns to officiate as Manciple; ſo that we had as much Affluence as reaſonable Men could deſire; and we lived as regular as People in their Families do in *England:* And we thought it a great Happineſs, that we enjoyed ſuch Plenty, after ſo great a Fatigue.

As I was ſettled in Gariſon, give me Leave to expreſs my Gratitude for the Faithfulneſs of all the Commanders in general that Campaign: This is the true Sentiment of my Heart, which I am ſenſible no one is able in Juſtice to diſpute: And every Man's Deeds ſhould ſhine according to his Deſerts. Therefore I will give you my

Opinion

Opinion as well as my Capacity will allow. I think in my Heart, that the Duke of *Marlborough* ordered his Matters ſo well as to diſappoint the *French* of all their intended Encampments; but it muſt be done by all their artful Inventions; which is a curious Scene to look over; though it was the Occaſion of long Marches: But the Willingneſs of our Men, and their Activity withal to guide their Actions, accompliſhed our full Intent. Now I imagine they did it in a View to aggravate them, that we might come to an Action. The *French* made a Show before we came to *Swiney*'s Camp, as if they had aimed to ſhew us their Performance; but we found they were intimidated, and afraid to attack us, ſo ſoon after *Oudenard*. Therefore I ſaid to our Men, they had not digeſted it well. Though I could not help pleaſing myſelf, to ſee all our Officers Attentiveneſs in making ready, till the *French* thought proper to make off again. I ſpoke to an Officer, one *Cope*, a Gentleman, whoſe half Pike I had often uſed to carry, and a Countryman of mine, as he called himſelf, (I have a great Notion it is he that is now a General) and ſaid, *Sir, they are ſenſible we are in a Capacity to fight better than we were at the laſt Action; therefore I don't think they will encounter with us any more this Campaign.* He made but little Anſwer to what I ſaid, but was ſeemingly in great Haſte, as if he was upon Buſineſs of great Importance. I found by that, that all the Officers in general had more Thought about it than

than I; for I was under no Concern in Life. Then I heard ſomebody ſay, that the Duke was determined to ſee what they would do; therefore we purſued them, and deprived them of *Swiney*'s Camp. But the World could not produce Men of ſuch profound Knowledge and Experience, even Men of all Degrees; for there were ſo good Orders given, that it was not in the Power of any one to find Fault; therefore every Thing went on pleaſantly and agreeably, and no Men were more active in obeying their Generals Commands than we: There was never any Confuſion amongſt us, but we underſtood one another from the higheſt to the loweſt Degree. Now I think thoſe that are endued with theſe Virtues and good Qualities, may not in the leaſt doubt of getting the Victory; for ſuch Men will fight like Heroes; no Confuſion attends their Proceedings; and where there is, Men will faulter, and fall from their vigorous Nature, and do not deſerve the Epithet of *Manly*. When they are not what I have expreſt, there is no Likelihood of getting the Victory; for they have not Power to exert themſelves when required. I muſt indeed confeſs it is not the Men's Fault altogether, but owing to the Miſunderſtanding between thoſe in a ſuperior Rank, which is often the Deſtruction of Thouſands. O Man, where is thy Humanity, when guilty of ſuch Cruelty? thou certainly muſt anſwer for theſe great Faults, where human Creatures are concerned!

As

As I have diſcloſed to the World the true Sentiments of my Heart concerning that Campaign, therefore I hope the World won't vary much in their Opinions; for it is my Nature to give to every Man his juſt Due; and had they not been deſerving, I ſhould have been as apt to have breathed forth my Aſperſions as ſoon as any one. But there are undeniable Proofs of their Behaviour; which delight my Soul, when I think, and look over all their Tranſactions: And it creates in me a ſtrong Veneration for that Calling. Likewiſe it leads me to imagine, I might be of great Service at theſe Years, might I be received into their Flock again. Now I have demonſtrated and given you the invincible Proofs of all I have ſaid, therefore I will proceed forward, and acquaint the World, of what I know of the next following Year; which ſhall be all Facts, and nothing but what my Eyes have ſeen.

CHAP. XXII.

The Author's Letter to his Wife in 1708: *Embarks for* England: *Meets with a violent Storm: Reflection on the Principle of true Courage: Returns to* Ghent: *Takes the Field. Advice to Officers not to defraud private Men of what is their Due.*

AS I had a Wife in *England*, I thought it would be prudent, to ſend her the following Letter, to ſatisfy her that I was alive and well. 'My Dear, you can't conceive, the

'Pleaſure

'Pleaſure I have enjoyed the laſt Campaign. 'Neither can I find Terms to expreſs my De-'light, any otherways than the Almighty has 'planted a Tree, never to be hewn nor cut 'down by Men, for his infinite Power is over 'all Things. He will ſkreen whom he pleaſeth 'under the Shadow of his Wings, till his Divine 'and moſt ſerene Power thinketh fit to make 'a Change; therefore I will venture to ſay, 'that his providential Power has been over the 'Tree, that I have repreſented, or elſe it would 'not have been at all, nor no Life to ſhoot forth 'his Branches, but would dwindle away and 'at laſt fall, as a ſtumbling Block for others. 'Therefore I beg that you and my Mother 'may not be any ways diſcomforted at my Ab-'ſence, ſince the Key of all Beings is my Sup-'porter, and in whom I take Delight. Neither 'be diſmay'd but take it as genuine as I wrote 'it, and it will give me a twofold Pleaſure, 'when I hear that you are not any ways diſ-'order'd. For my part I wiſh all the World 'was half ſo happy as myſelf, therefore I hope 'you will not grudge me what I have con-'cealed in my own Breaſt, or what his infinite 'Power has beſtowed upon me. Methinks 'I am bleſſed above all Mankind for every 'Thing is reſtored to me, that in Reaſon I 'can wiſh for, and I hope you may be en-'dowed with the ſame Gift, and that in Duty 'bound I ſhall ever pray for. So I conclude 'yours, to whom I will join my Mother for ever.

Matthew Biſhop.

I ſhall

I ſhall make one Obſervation, and then ſhall proceed to my Story. It was a common Saying amongſt Soldiers, when the Officers were ordered a recruiting; *they are going in order to bring over thoſe that were killed the laſt Campaign.* I think this doth not require to be interpreted to the Reader, for the Senſe of it is obvious enough, and eaſy to be comprehended. And it created Mirth and Diverſion, which is the only thing a Soldier has to keep up his Spirits.

Soon after our Officers were gone a recruiting, we heard that there was a Demand from the Queen, for ten Regiments out of *Flanders*, in order to preſerve her Royal Perſon in her own Dominions, when the diametrical oppoſite Party, and the pretended Prince of *Wales* attempted to invade *Great Britain.* Their Attempt failed, neither will it ever have it's deſired Effect, till God gives up all his Power to the Devil, and till then we are environed round with ſtrong Walls that nothing will penetrate. At that time you will find, we were ordered to prevent any Corruption that might befal us through Negligence or dilatory Means. In *February* we left *Ghent* under the Command of Brigadier *Sabine*, and went on Board the Bylanders and with all Expedition for *Bruges.* When we arrived there, we had Orders to continue till a Regiment, that was appointed to go with us, came up; which was two Days after. Then there were Orders iſſued out for us to go to *Oſtend*, where we all embarked on Board ſeveral Ships.

The

The Company that I belonged to, went into the *Mary* Galley, and put out to Sea. But we had no ſooner got into the Ocean, but we were put to our Shifts, and with great Difficulty eſcaped going to the Bottom. You'll find as ſoon as we appeared in the Main, we all fell into Confuſion, by a violent Storm, or properly a Hurricane. We expected every Moment to be ſwallowed up, but ſtill Providence protected me, and I was very active at that Juncture of Time. I finding the Veſſel was over laded went to the Captain for his Approbation, and ſaid, *Sir, I beg you will give ear, to what I am going to intimate to you; I ſhall be glad to know your Diſpoſition, and whether you are willing to diſpoſe of thoſe Punchions of Beer, that are laſhed upon Deck: If not, the Conſequence will be that you certainly will diſpoſe of all theſe living Souls, to the Influence of the Waves; for inſtead of three Companies you ſhould have had but two, therefore I beg you will conſult within yourſelf.* I ſhould not have taken the Liberty of ſpeaking, had I not been very well acquainted with the Seas. The Captain was ſo confuſed that he could ſcarce give me an Anſwer, but ſaid, *as we are all alone, we can call no Court martial, therefore I think the beſt Thing we can do, is to ſtave the Punchions, and try what Effect that will have.* Upon this, we all went to Work, and lightened our Veſſel preſently. By this Means, we were rendered capable of enduring the Weather better than we could have expected, I ſaid when I found the Virtue of it; *it was*

equal

equal to a hundred Men, and I will venture to ſay had we not taken that Method, we ſhould all have been loſt, and therefore I valued myſelf on being the chief Inſtrument of ſaving Hundreds. As good Fortune would have it, the Veſſel was a fine Sailer, and although we tack'd about very often, yet I could perceive we gained Ground prodigious faſt; for it was not long before we arrived at the Place appointed, *Sheels* in the *North* of *England*. In going over the Bar there, we ſtruck or rather graſed her. With that the Captain cried out, *O my Ship*, and we all imagined her Back had been broke; but as good Luck would have it, the Ship received little or no Damage, though I muſt needs confeſs every Man was intimidated at that ſudden Motion; and when they were made ſenſible ſhe was not harmed, they fell all into Raptures and ſuch Tranſports of Joy, that any one would have been ſurpriſed to have ſeen their Extaſy.

Nothing ſhews a Man's Capacity more than when in Diſtreſs or in Danger; and I remember the time that I have been in great Danger aboard of Ship, and at the ſame time ſome Men were inſenſible of it. I will leave the World to attribute this Inſenſibility to what they pleaſe; and will proceed in my Relation.

When we arrived ſafe in the Harbour, I found the Veſſel was well known by the Colliers; therefore I aſked ſome Queſtions, and they informed me ſhe had taken ſeveral of them. We continued in the Veſſel two Days, before there was

was a large Cat preſſed; and it went by the Name of the *Raylſtone*. Then we received Orders to go on Board of her, likewiſe ſeven Companies more belonging to ſeven different Regiments. That was our Station for ſeven Weeks ſucceſſively. I will leave the World to judge, whether our Situation was agreeable or not, as our Lodgings were very indifferent. Therefore when it was time to go to Reſt, I was the Occaſion of a great deal of Mirth by theſe Words, *Gentlemen, I beg you will all agree to my Propoſal; that is, to draw out your Bayonets, and let me ſee whether you can diſtinguiſh the ſofteſt Plank.* That diverted all our Company, and we were as happy as if it had been a Bed of Down, as the Reader will find. But I think proper to explain the Method we took to reſt all the time of our Continuance there.

It was in Camp Faſhion. After we undreſſed ourſelves, we put both Legs in our Waiſtcoat Sleeves, laid the Napſacks down for our Pillow, the Breeches under our Shoulders, and the Coats over us, which made a complete Rug, or at leaſt what we were very well contented with without grumbling. I have ſince reflected within myſelf, that Patience and Content are the Beauties of the Mind, and that a hearty Zeal for a good Cauſe ſtifles the Senſe of Hardſhip. So that it is evident, nothing can fatigue Men of this Temper. Their Yoke becomes eaſy and their Burthens light, by their inward Content, which is at all times a ſure Support under the greateſt Calamities. And who will be ſo

mad as not to cultivate and cheriſh what will aſſiſt them, in every Thing that human Creature is capable of undertaking. Beſides it ſtrengthens their Faith, and carries up their Thoughts to that all powerful Being, on whom their Dependence lyes. For my Part, I will ſay once more, that Victory doth not altogether depend upon Numbers; but on inward Strength darted into the Breaſt by the King of Heaven. This alone forms the true Hero.

Give me leave to explain my own Nature and Diſpoſition. When I faced my Enemies, inſtead of being intimidated as moſt Men are, at the firſt Appearance, I was always animated, knowing that the Victory would be given to them, who relied upon, and had their Dependence in God's Goodneſs, who chuſeth him to be their chief Commander. It created Pleaſure and gave me Comfort, to think that the adverſe Party could have no Power over us, without the Aſſiſtance of Divine Providence. Thus I certainly concluded, that all Victories would be given to the juſt Side, and to relieve Oppreſſion. Now thoſe, that diſpute theſe my Sentiments, will certainly fall by the Sword of Steel, when they face their Enemies or have any Controverſy againſt them; but thoſe, that come into my Meaſures and Opinion, will never receive Wounds or Scars, but run through all Difficulties in Defiance of the adverſe Party, as I did through the Scene which I have ſet forth, to be a Pattern for the Commonalty of Mankind, or thoſe who profeſs what I delighted in.

After we had diverted ourſelves for ſeven Weeks at *Shields*, it was thought proper, to return to our former Quarters, *Ghent*. I thought that very agreeable News, for I longed to be in Action, and there was no Likelihood of having any thing to do in *England*, to keep us from Idleneſs. This was the Occaſion of my being ſo deſirous of changing our Situation. As the diabolical Powers were prevented of that Diadem they were in queſt of, I thought there was but little occaſion for our Continuance there. When we received our Orders, we ſteered our Courſe for *Oſtend*, and when we had ſo done, we went with all Expedition for *Ghent*, where we continued three Days. In the mean time, all Preparations imaginable were made for our Campaign.

When we left *Ghent*, we marched to a Camp that was between *Bruſſels* and *Louvain*. At the ſame time, his moſt excellent Majeſty King *George* ſhewed his paternal Love for this Kingdom, and gave the ſtrongeſt Proofs of it; for he expoſed his moſt Sacred Perſon for the Preſervation of his loyal Subjects. I remember well when he reviewed us at the above Camp, where were the Duke of *Marlborough*, Prince *Eugene* and the other confederate Generals, we gained great Applauſe. At that Juncture of Time, while we were under Arms, ſomething happened, which I think proper to lay before the World, to caution an Officer not to give a Soldier cauſe to cenſure him at any time. There was a general Complaint amongſt our Men;

and they took this Opportunity to divulge their Grievances, thinking in ſome Meaſure they might be righted. They imagined that Brigadier *Sabine* intended to defraud them of their Pay, during the time of their Continuance on Shipboard. Now I muſt needs ſay, had this really been his Intention, it would have been doing a very unjuſt Thing. Beſides it might very poſſibly have been very hurtful to himſelf, through the Inſtigation of ſome invidious People. But the manner in which the Scene was opened prevented his Deſtruction, though he was in a violent Rage. General *Webb* ſtood at the Front of our Regiment, and as good Fortune would have it, the Brigadier came up to him, and had a long Conference with him. At that Juncture, one of our Men took Courage and ſaid, *have you brought us the Sea Pay?* With that he fell into a Rage, and told the General that he could never paſs by his Regiment without hearing their Clamour, which was inſupportable. Hereupon the General deſired to know what had been ſaid. He made anſwer, *they are continually dunning me for the Sea Pay, which ought not to be.* The General ſaid, *Sir, you give great Attention to what the Men ſay, for I could not diſtinguiſh what they ſaid.* Our brave General *Webb* could make himſelf agreeable to all Mankind, and he gave us the ſtrongeſt Proofs of it at that Juncture, that ever Man did. For he not only pleaſed the Brigadier, but at the ſame time countenanced us, by turning his Head towards us with a Smile. Then he call-

ed the Adjutant, and desired he would go round to every Man, and offer them two Pistoles to inform who it was that mentioned the Sea Pay. But this was a mere Pretence, as you will find: For he went to the Left of the Regiment, rode through all the Ranks, and offered the Money with a Smile, and at the same time privately said, *don't impeach one another.* When he had rode through the whole, he returned to the General and Brigadier, and said, *if it please your Honours, none will own it, neither will the Money tempt any of them to impeach each other.* Then our noble General made answer and said, *it shews they love one another, and are all of one Way of thinking, which is a beautiful thing in a Soldier. Therefore, Sir, as we have made this strict Inquisition amongst them, and you and I have found out their Dispositions, I beg you may take care that they be paid; for that Money will be very acceptable this Campaign.* The Brigadier said but little, before he walked off. Though I found by virtue of the General's Word speaking, we were paid our Dividend, in a short time after, which was while we continued at that Ground. I remember well, while I was upon a foraging Command of 40 Men, 8 Hours, at my return, which was late at Night, I heard the agreeable News by the Sentinel, that the whole Regiment was paid. Upon hearing that, I said to my Companions, *come, since it is so I am determin'd to call up a Sutler and make myself merry before I go to Rest.* So it was agreed, and we drank two Feltmates each Man, of

extremely good *Bruſſels* Beer, and went to our Tents and received a ſound Sleep. In the Morning we all received our Dividends. For my part I was prodigiouſly well pleaſed for the Sake of the poor Men that wanted it, not that I valued it myſelf any more than a Snuff of a Candle.

CHAP. XXIII.

March from Ghent *towards* Liſle: Artois *fortified: Stratagem of Prince* Eugene's: *The Siege of* Liſle: *The Defeat of* 24000 French *at* Winendale *by General* Webb: Ghent *retaken from the* French.

IT was not long after, before Orders were iſſued out to hold ourſelves in Readineſs to march at the firing of three Cannon, for the *French* were in Motion. They thought it would be doing themſelves a great piece of Service to march for *Ghent*, and hold us in Play amongſt our own Gariſons. But it availed them little. Nay if all the *French* Politicians had agreed and put all their Heads together, they could in no wiſe have fruſtrated the brave Duke of *Marlborough*'s Deſigns. In the End they were not inſenſible of this, for he diſappointed them of all their Inventions, and herein ſhewed his Dexterity and profound Knowledge. Likewiſe his moſt ſublime Goodneſs was celebrated throughout the whole Army. And where the Supporters are good, it is impoſſible the Edifice

ſhould

ſhould tumble. Nay all Praiſe and Honour was due to him, for his daily ſhewing his paternal Love to all his Soldiers by making every thing eaſy and agreeable to them.

Knowing that the *French* durſt not look him in the Face, he did not think proper to follow them to *Ghent*, but intended to deprive them of their Winter Quarters at the cloſing of the Campaign. Wherefore he marched towards *Liſle*, in order to ſee what Reception we ſhould meet with there. On our way thither I went upon a great Command, which was to reinforce *Artois*, and when we came there, we were very dexterous in fortifying it; for we rendered it capable of withſtanding a whole Army. And in truth it needed our Help, for I got upon the Ramparts, and could view the *French* Army and ours, but a ſhort Diſtance from each other. Then on a ſudden I could diſcern a Body of the *French* Horſe come ſo very near ours, that we did imagine there would be ſome Action performed by them. But they all were intimidated, three only excepted, who darted forth from the reſt hoping they would follow. But they were ſtruck with a Panick. Then ſome of our Men went after theſe three and obliged them to ſurrender. It occaſioned a great deal of Mirth, to ſee how they galloped from one part to another; but they were ſurrounded and brought in as cool as Lambs. Then they were taken before the Governor.

It was not long after that, before we marched to the Army. Before we could reach *Liſle*,

there were Orders iſſued out, for four Regiments to go under the Command of Prince *Eugene*, in order to conduct the large Cannon and all the Artillery, fitting to carry on the Siege, the Duke of *Argyll*'s, my Lord *Hartford*'s, my Lord *North* and *Gray*'s and General *Webb*'s, being the firſt Regiments upon Command; that prevented our being at the opening of the Siege. We were greatly out of our Bias with the Artillery, but we ſecured it, with all the care imaginable, by keeping a Boviac, for we were under great Apprehenſions of Danger, and I believe ſome of the Great Ones began to deſpair of our ſafe Arrival. I muſt needs ſay, it was a long and ſlow March: But I will make bold to explain the Method the Prince took, which every Body will ſay was a good Stratagem. When the General beat, we halted, and when the Tattoo beat we marched. By that Means we conducted it along, and were at our Arrival received with great Joy.

But for my part I grew very impatient, thinking we ſhould never have the Honour of ſeeing *Liſle*. The Reaſon of my being ſo deſirous of ſeeing that large important Place, was that I hoped to be employed in ſuch a Manner, that I might exert myſelf in doing ſome noble Exploit for the Honour and Praiſe of us all. So far my Ambition led; that was the fundamental Cauſe of my coming into the Army, and I put myſelf in a Sphere as I thought, that I could be of moſt Service in carrying on the War with Vigour. Though I ſay it, I had a great

Influence

Influence over Thouſands by Encouragements, and I may venture to ſay, that though of ſo mean a Capacity, I inſpired ſo much Courage into thoſe whom I converſed with, that nothing would have daunted them at that Time. Now what Influence muſt thoſe of profound Knowledge and Experience have, if they would give themſelves Time and Delight in what I did? I am certain it would render them capable of performing more than a Man can deviſe; but at theſe Days the Love of Money was all they ſought after, and they thought it beneath them to countenance their Inferiors. But that was not my Nature, for I ſpent an Eſtate to get the Good-will of all I converſed with, and I in no wiſe repent, as it was in a juſt Cauſe. Though now it would comfort me in my old Age, yet I am like an old Coachman that loves the ſmack of the Whip, and I fancy I might be of Service at this Juncture, might I be admitted into the Scene: I ſtill have ſome Idea of it.

Prince *Eugene* being the chief commanding General at *Liſle*, there was nothing wanting as far as his Dexterity went, and the World muſt ſay he was an artful cunning Man. The Siege was carry'd on with a great deal of Conduct: Though one would imagine that it was almoſt impracticable to take ſuch a ſtrong fortified Place. After the Trenches were opened and the Engineers had taken the right Method, we made the Sun ſhine through ſome of the Walls. But our Regiment was cannonaded with great Violence, and the Duſt made to fly about our Ears prodigiouſly.

The beſieged would take every Opportunity they could, and I remember one time in particular, as I was going to the Waggons in order to fetch ſome Bread, the Cannon Balls came ſinging by my Ears, took my Hat off and blowed it twenty Yards from me. Such Clouds of Duſt and Gravel flew about that they almoſt blinded ſome of our Men. For my own part, I thought it almoſt impoſſible to fire off ſo many Cannon Balls, in ſo ſhort a Space of Time. Yet they did but little Damage, which was owing to Providence, and I had uſed to ſay to the Men, *truſt to Providence and never fear.*

Then General *Webb* took two Regiments that covered ſome Quarters which lay convenient for a quick Motion, and no one more dextrous then himſelf; he took the above mentioned Regiments, Lord *Hartford*'s and Sir *Richard Temple*'s and marched them along in order to beat the *French* out of a Shattow. But as they were going along the *French* endeavoured to intercept their March: For they lay in double Ditches and pouring forth their Shot upon them, killed and wounded a great many. But nothing prevented their marching to the Shattow, which they made themſelves Maſter of, and brought off a great many Priſoners. I remember well at that Juncture of Time I was upon Major *Congreve*'s Guard, who was Major of a Brigade that lay very near thoſe Regiments, and I remember at that time *Webb* very narrowly eſcaped having the *French* Army upon him, for they lay in Ambuſcade on purpoſe to ſurprize him. Where-

fore

fore he was obliged to quit his Quarters in great Haſte for they are a People that love to take Advantage. But the Duke of *Marlborough* holding himſelf in readineſs to receive them they dared not attempt to face that great General, but thought proper to draw off again. I was prodigious ſorry for one Sergeant *Redley*, who belonged to my Lord *Hartford*'s Regiment, a particular Acquaintance of mine, and a Man that I had a great Regard for. He came in greatly wounded, and every one imagined his Wounds were mortal. I was much concerned for him. But I began to think it was in vain to condole for another's Misfortunes at that Juncture, when the whole Army was expoſed in one Shape or other, myſelf not excepted; yet I had the good Fortune to eſcape ſharing the ſame Fate, which Thouſands underwent.

There were Detachments out of ſeveral Regiments, to go in order to take ſome Out-Works or properly Sconces or little Fortreſſes that commanded the City. But there was a ſtrong Citadel to command that large important Place beſides them, and as we were in Action endeavouring to make ourſelves Maſter of them, they ſprung ſeveral Mines and blew up a great Number of our Men. I had ſome Idea of the thing, or whether it was only an Imagination or not I cannot tell, but I thought I could perceive the Ground tremble under me. Whereupon I ſaid to all that would hear me, *Gentlemen, fall down with your Faces to the Earth*, I myſelf did ſo, like one dead. The Word was but juſt out of my Mouth,

Mouth, before it made the Earth tremble, and all that were upon it, or near that Place, were blown up, and ſome torn aſunder, ſo that they run through a diſmal Operation. It had more Effect than it otherwiſe would have had, had they taken my Method. But moſt of our Company did, and preſerved their Lives; though ſome of their Coats and Hair were burnt, when at the ſame time ſeveral Sergeants and private Men, that were farther off, that would not follow this Rule, were blown into the Air. Wherefore I ſaid to them that followed my Advice, *through Obſtinacy they ſought their own Deſtruction.* They made me anſwer, *they were thoroughly convinced it was ſo.* Yet I would not have the World think a Man can always arm himſelf againſt ſuch a Thing, for Imaginations are not always right, though it happened ſo at that Juncture of Time, which I impute to the Providence of God, whoſe Goodneſs is very extenſive. I can ſay ſo by Experience, therefore I will own it with a ſincere Acknowledgment.

After we had been there about a Month, our Ammunition was almoſt expended, though the Duke of *Marlborough* had ſent us a Supply of what he could ſpare. For he knew that the whole Dependance of our carrying on the Siege, was on the great Convoy that we were expecting. The *French* were not inſenſible of our Wants, and ſent a Detachment of Twenty-four Thouſand Men from their Army, with an Intent to intercept it: Though Providence directed it to the contrary, as the Reader will find.

find. Our noble Duke had a distinguishing Capacity, I must needs own, superior to the rest of Mankind. I have often said, he could see into the Minds of Men; for he judiciously observed their Natures; which made every Thing go pleasant and agreeable, without the least Confusion in Life. I can say so with Justice; for when the Duke of *Marlborough* had given General *Webb* the Command of 7000 Foot, and 150 Horse, in order to defend themselves against 24000 *French*; though they were so superior in Number, he was not in the least discouraged, but relied on the Bravery and Conduct of General *Webb*. And in Truth, the latter, I am sensible, thought himself happy in that Command. I could perceive it by his Countenance, and by his pleasant Behaviour to all his Men in general. He was an old experienced General, and a Man that knew every Part of the Country, without which he could not have known how to dispose of his Men. And this plainly appears from his beautiful Disposition of his Troops. He marched to a Place called *Winendale Heath*, and there drew all his Men into a Wood, and made them as secure as he could, in order to be in a Capacity to receive the *French*, or to shew them our Arm of Defence. All our Men were in high Spirits, and eager to exert themselves at their first Appearance; but our General desired they would have Patience till such Time as all might be in Action together. Our advantageous Ground was the Destruction of a great many Thousands

of

of the *French*, for we had them all Ways, Front, and Rear, and Flank; and it continued in that manner for a conſiderable Time, till they retreated in great Confuſion. But the Reaſon of their being ſo intimidated, was the Ingenuity of brave General *Webb*, whoſe Behaviour the World is not inſenſible of. For he ordered his Drums and Trumpets in ſuch a Manner in the Time of Action, that they imagined our whole Army was coming upon them. I verily believe, that was the chief Reaſon of their Retreat. He had likewiſe diſpoſed of his Men in ſuch Manner, that they could have a full View of the *French*, though the *French* could hardly perceive them. For when we gave them a Volley they were confuſed, and ſcarce knew where it came from. Even their Officers were ſeemingly in great Conſternation; for their faint Commands could not prevail upon the Men to face the Wood: And their Aſtoniſhment was ſo great, that no one could perſuade them but thoſe Shouts came from the Elements. I muſt needs own, comparatively ſpeaking, that it had the Reſemblance of a Thunder-Clap, more than of any other Thing in the World beſides. But it is wrong in any Man to ſuffer Imagination to get the better of his Courage. Moſt of our Men were prodigiouſly ſorry that they retreated in ſuch Haſte: I verily believe, had they continued upon the Ground a little longer, we ſhould have brought their ſuperior Number to have been inferior to ours; and at the leaſt, it would have rendered us capable of following them.

them. But we were ſo few, and they retreating before we had greatly reduced their Numbers, it was in vain to purſue them. Our brave General could diſtinguiſh, as we were in an advantageous Situation, and able to withſtand all their Reſiſtance, had we followed them, it was very poſſible they might have had the Advantage of us, and prevented our accompliſhing our Deſign. Wherefore we continued in that Situation till they had entirely left us to conduct the Convoy by ourſelves.

By this Action our General gained great Applauſe; and it animated the whole Army to ſuch a Degree, that it rendered them capable of carrying on the Siege with Vigour. Though at one Time I remember, ſome of our Generals began to deſpair of our bringing the Convoy ſafe: Upon which there were Orders iſſued out, and Preparations made for raiſing the Siege. But our brave General ſhewed them an Inſtance of his Conduct, and brought them out of all Doubts and Deſpair; the *French* were as much diſpirited as we were enlivened, and could not digeſt thoſe large Cannon Balls that we threw amongſt them, but were obliged to ſurrender.

Thus every Thing had it's deſired Effect; and as there was no Occaſion for our Continuance, we left that Ground, and marched to *Winendale Heath* again, and pitched our Tents. After we had ſo done, I went along with ſeveral, in order to ſhew them where we performed the Action. Then we returned to our Tents again, but

but were exceſſively merry all the Time we continued at the ſaid Camp, which was one Night. From thence we marched to *Ruſſila*'s Camp, and continued there ſome Time; but that Encampment was not ſo agreeable as we could have wiſhed, by reaſon of Proviſion being ſo exceſſively dear, and prodigiouſly ſcarce; ſo that it was hard getting a Commodity for our Money. The Reaſon of that Scarcity was, the *French* had cut off our Communication: Some were near *Oudenard*, and ſome at *Bruges*, and others at *Ghent*; and by that Method they prevented all our Intercourſe with *Holland*, and other Parts, from whence we could get Proviſion. Therefore we were obliged to make four Days Bread ſerve us ſix. In the Interim, we went a marauding by Brigades; we did that by Way of preventing any Obſtruction that often happens to a ſmall Body of Men. We were not obſtructed in the leaſt, nay, met with ſome kind Reception; for the People were more willing to give than we were to take. I remember they gave us Beef and Bacon ſufficient to ſuffice us for two or three Days. Thus we made Shift for Subſiſtence; though it was more than we could expect at that Juncture of Time. Another Time I went by myſelf, and found a Cock and ſix large Fowls, and three Ropes of Onions. I thought myſelf very ſucceſsful in getting thoſe good Things. Then I thought it would be prudent in me to diſpoſe of ſome of them, leſt they ſhould grow ſtale upon my Hands. Wherefore I ſold four of the beſt for a Patacoon, and the

Onions

Onions I ſold for three Skillings, and the other three I took to my Tent, and kept them for my own eating, they being a Kind of a Rarity. But when I came to eat them, I could not vouchſafe to eat them alone, but invited whom I thought proper to eat with me. I had three plentiful Meals, and ſome good Liquors to waſh it down; and this was the Method I took, and in no wiſe deſpaired of a ſufficient Supply of Proviſion all the Time of our Continuance at that Ground. But there were ſeveral that were almoſt ſtarving. I aſked them the Reaſon, *Why they did not endeavour to get a ſufficient Subſiſtence?* They made Anſwer, *They would truſt to Providence.* At that Reply, I thought it high Time to ſpeak; therefore I ſaid, 'Gentlemen, you'll find that Pro-'vidence will beſtow of his Proviſion to them 'that will endeavour to ſeek after it; but thoſe 'that are indolent, and have no Thoughts of 'Induſtry, muſt not expect to reap any Benefit 'from it. It is not for a Man to look up, and 'call upon the Lord to help him, and at the 'ſame Time hide his Talent in the Ground; 'but it is the Man that ſpeaks with a Fervency 'of Heart, and whoſe Actions correſpond to 'his Words, who is bleſſed. For God did not 'make Man to be an uſeleſs Creature, but made 'him that he might labour under all Difficul-'ties that might befal him in this World. 'Therefore great is your Folly if you don't act 'as I have obſerved." After this Conference I left them, and in the Morning I heard that they

had aſked to go and ſee what the Country would afford them. I was glad to hear what I ſaid had ſo much Influence on them, and ſuch an Effect, as to change their Minds in ſo ſhort a Time. Within two or three Days they all came to me, and rendered me Thanks for my Advice. I was likewiſe glad to ſee that they were ſo grateful as to acknowledge my paternal Love towards them; it ſhewed a Reformation with Reſpect towards their Adviſer; and after they were ſenſible of their Folly, they obſerved my Inſtructions, and by Virtue of that had a ſufficient Supply all the Time of our Continuance at that Ground. Though I would not have the World think thoſe Things are done without Care and Induſtry; if they do, they are greatly miſtaken; for there requires great Attention to every Thing undertaken when in ſuch Circumſtances as we were in, and the Duke of *Marlborough*'s Attention and Care was over us all. You'll find when we left that Ground, we marched to a Ground in their Country. From our expeditious March, I could perceive the Duke of *Marlborough*'s Intention was to ſurpriſe the Enemy. For we had continued no longer than one Night at that Ground, and in the Evening following the general Orders were to march all Night without Beat of Drum. Accordingly we did, and, though I ſay it, I don't think it was poſſible for a Body of Men to paſs over more Ground than we did, in ſo ſhort a Time; but we were all in ſo high Spirits, that we could ſcarce feel the Ground

Ground we walked upon. The Reaſon of our Ecſtacy was, that we imagined we ſhould be able to ſhew the *French* ſome more of our Performances: But we were diſappointed. We were no ways appriſed of meeting with any Obſtruction in the leaſt; yet when we came within half a Mile of the River, we were commanded to halt, till ſuch Time as the Tin Boats were laid for our Columns to march over: But we did not attempt to paſs till ſuch Time as the Patrollers were paſt. When every Thing was completed fit for our marching over, there were Orders iſſued out, to hold ourſelves in Readineſs, and divide into ſix Columns, in order to march at the Signal of three Cannons.

I muſt needs ſay, I was prodigiouſly ſorry to hear that News; for if I might have had my Way, the Cannon ſhould have been fired after we had been over. But our noble Generals Generoſity led them ſo far as not to be guilty of any mean Action. Yet if we had done as I obſerved, we might have taken them all as Priſoners of War. I imagined our Generals Thoughts were, that the Signal might bring them to an Action: And had they attempted that, they certainly would have had the Advantage of us; for it plainly appeared that Ten Thouſand might have kept off Forty Thouſand, as the oppoſite Side of the River appeared like the Ramparts of a fortified Place. But inſtead of their being animated, they were intimidated at the Opportunity we gave them to exert themſelves: And I could not help pleaſing myſelf

with this Obſervation, they were ſenſible *their Landlord was coming to reckon with them:* Knowing they had not ſufficient to pay, they retired in great Confuſion, and left the Ground and ſome of their Utenſils and Equipage, which did compenſate a little for our Trouble of marching ſo far by Night. And had not we been fatigued with a long March, we might have purſued them; but our brave Generals were not immoderate in their Command, but could diſtinguiſh the Nature of their Men, and were unwilling to put any Thing to them, but what they could perform with Vigour: Therefore we were contented with outing them of that Camp. As the Day was far ſpent, it would have been in vain to purſue after freſh Men, therefore it was an Act of Prudence to continue in that Situation till we were refreſhed.

While we were at that Ground, I had a great Deſire to go and have a ſecond View of the Ground on which we engaged the *French* the laſt Campaign; for being ſo near *Oudenard*, I was unwilling to miſs that Opportunity. When I aſked my Officer, he very readily granted my Requeſt. I took along with me ſeveral of my Acquaintance that were not there, in order to ſhew them in what Manner we were engaged. It gave me a great deal of Satisfaction, by preventing my forming a wrong Idea of the Place, which I very poſſibly might have done, had I been debarred from this ſecond Sight of it: But now it is ſo ſtrongly impreſſed upon my Mind, that I never ſhall forget it. I returned to the

Camp again, and took a View of the Enemy's Ingenuity in the Camp they run from; and I will venture to ſay once more, had not they been intimidated with the Thoughts *that their Maſter was coming to reckon with them*, they might have defended themſelves againſt ſix times our Number; for their Works muſt have damped moſt of our Shot, being ſo much above us, and on the oppoſite Side of the River, which we were obliged to paſs.

When we left that Ground, we made the beſt of our Way to *Ghent*, hearing that the *French* had taken Poſſeſſion of it. On our Arrival there, we were ſhut out of our intended Quarters; wherefore all Preparation imaginable was made for firing at the Town. The Beſieged knowing we had more Right to the Quarters than them, they reſigned by beating a Parley. I remember well, our Regiment marched in at St. *Peter*'s Port, and lay under Arms in the long Street that goeth to St. *Peter*'s Hill, till ſuch Time as all the *French* thought proper to ſurrender and relinquiſh the Place, and fly elſewhere for their Winter Quarters. I could not help pleaſing myſelf with the Thoughts of making them bow to us in every particular Thing; and I always uſed to remind our Men by ſaying, *They always will ſubmit to their Superiors*; though at the ſame Time we were inferior in Number. But in thoſe Days our brave Generals endeavoured to ſurpriſe them, which is the chief Article in War. I am not opinionative, knowing that the World can diſtinguiſh better

than I; and therefore will refer it to their Judgment, and proceed in my Story.

After we had made the *French* fly for Shelter, and obliged them to change their Quarters for our Accommodation, we marched up to the Caſtle of Arms, in order to lye that Night. It being *Chriſtmas-Eve*, and cold Weather, we thought a Gariſon very agreeable, that we might reſerve our Vigor till Spring, and be enabled to endure another ſuch Campaign as the laſt, which laſted almoſt the whole Year round. I would not have the World think we ſpent thoſe ten Months idly; for all were in Motion, and conſtantly employed, from the higheſt to the loweſt.

As we had, after ſo glorious a Campaign, the good Fortune to get our intended Quarters, it added to my Joy, to think I had a Skreen to keep off the Severity of the Weather from me. I muſt needs own we had a prodigious ſharp Winter, which generally denotes a backward Spring. After I had conſulted with whom I thought proper, I made a Propoſal which they all reliſhed; that was, to ſpend our Time in Mirth, during our Continuance in Gariſon. They readily complied, and ſaid, *With all their Hearts.* Then ſaid I, *Gentlemen we have a good Miſtreſs who pays us twice a Week, therefore by Agreement we will ſubſcribe to a Club which I have appointed at the Corner-Houſe of the* Spaniſh *Parade.* They ſaid, *They would do any Thing to oblige me, but were afraid their Money would not admit of any ſuch Thing.* I ſaid,

Never

Never fear, I'll make up all Deficiencies. So it was agreed on, and when we met, our chief Converſation was in forming Conjectures about the Operations of the next Campaign; and by this we became great Politicians. And in Truth, ſome of them were Men of Genius, and very capable of treating Subjects of that Kind. This was our Method of proceeding, and by that Means we ſpent many Hours agreeably enough.

I will now make bold to trouble the Reader with a Line or two that I ſent to my Wife before I went to Camp, then I will proceed forward to the reſt of my Actions.

'My Dear, be ſo candid as to excuſe my 'annual Letters, as my Thoughts hitherto have 'been taken up with Buſineſs of great Impor-'tance that required great Attention, and ren-'dered me unfit to think of my private Af-'fairs. But as we have accompliſhed all we 'undertook the laſt Campaign, I am in Hopes 'we ſhall not meet with any Obſtruction the 'next enſuing; and I don't doubt in the leaſt 'but that our Deſires will be fulfilled, if we 'truſt to the Providence of God: For he is our 'Rock, our Shield, and ſtrong Tower: For 'my part, I truſt in him to aid and aſſiſt me, 'knowing that he is our only Support. So I 'conclude with Fervency of Heart to what is 'abovementioned; likewiſe give me Leave to 'ſubſcribe myſelf yours for ever, not forgetting 'my Mother.'

CHAP. XXIV.

Begins the Campaign in 1709: Tournay *taken by the Allies: Sir* Richard Temple's *Behaviour there: Battle of* Malplaquet: *The taking of* Mons.

IN 1709, we marched out of *Ghent*, in order to go to Camp, where we lay cool and quiet for ſome Time; though our brave Generals were in Action in different Shapes, contriving what they thought would be moſt to our Advantage: And I muſt needs own they were in perpetual Motion. Then all Preparations were made for the whole Army to march and beſiege *Tournay*. Our Men in general behaved with ſuch Conduct and Vigor, that the Place was obliged to ſurrender. Moſt of the *French* retired in great Confuſion into the Citadel, and left the Town to the Mercy of our Men. After the Duke of *Marlborough* had fully determined to take the Citadel, he ſent from the grand Army, that lay to cover it, the Duke of *Argyll*'s Regiment, my Lord *Hartford*'s, my Lord *North* and *Grey*'s, and the Queen's marching Regiment of Foot, commanded by General *Webb*, under the Command of Sir *Richard Temple*, to lay Siege to it. Sir *Richard* behaved with a great deal of Ingenuity, and by that Means enlivened us all, and rendered us capable to exert ourſelves when required. I muſt needs own, there was Buſineſs ſufficient

ent to employ us all; for it was a prodigious ſtrong Place, and well provided for us with a great Number of Mines.

I remember, after our Army had completed twelve Saps, we mounted the Trenches, and ſat upon the Foot Banks, when of a ſudden the Enemy ſprung a Mine, which made the Earth tremble under us; but it ceaſed in a Moment. We were ſurpriſed it had not taken us up into the Clouds; for, comparatively ſpeaking, it aſcended like unto a Cloud. We were prodigious hard at Work in ſapping the Enemy, who ſapped under us, and ſprung ſeveral Mines, which ſtifled great Numbers of our Men. Then thoſe that were above would work with all their Might, in order to give them below Air. By that Means we did ſave ſome alive. But to prevent the like again, we made a ſubterraneous Paſſage from one Mine to another, which rendered us capable of doing more Execution than before; neither was there any Occaſion of expoſing ourſelves to the Mouth of the Cannon as before, though our Regiment did. I remember the Cannon Balls came rolling amongſt our Tents, and did a great deal of Damage; and what was very uncommon, our Officers Tents were pitched in the Front of the Regiment: I know no Reaſon why they ſhould be ſo at that critical Juncture. But our Officers finding there was no playing with edged Tools, our brave Commander, Sir *Richard Temple*, gave Orders for a Sconce to be erected to prevent their Annoyance. And it was done

in

in ſo beautiful a Manner, as to take off all View and Sight they had of us before; which was greatly to our Advantage, but affected them much.

I believe every one will ſay, the Governor made a brave Reſiſtance. He defended the Place till Money and all Proviſions were almoſt ſpent: They cut their Plate in Pieces, and ſtamped the Governor's Head upon it; but finding but little Relief from this, they beat a Parley, but did not come to any Terms; though we all imagined they would have ſurrendered, as the Time was limited for our Commander to march in. But we found to the contrary. I believe the *French* Soldiers thought as we did; for in the Time of the Parley, our *Geneva* Men went to their Paliſades, and ſold them a large Quantity of Gin; and they were as familiar one with another, as if they had never been Enemies. But hearing their Cannon fired in the Citadel, every Man went to his reſpective Poſt; and finding their Flag was taken down, our Batteries fired with all the Expedition imaginable; and the *French* likewiſe, without giving us any Reſpite. A Soldier's Duty is to be always ready at the Word of Command; for one cannot conceive the Quickneſs of our Commanders Repartees.

When they were all diſplaying their Cannon from their Platforms, and from all their ſtrong fortified Places, there were ſome very fine Horſes a graſing; and it grieved me to ſee ſome of the *French* had crept out of their Works,

Works, and drove the Horſes under the Command or Mouth of their Cannon. This disfigured their Beauty in a ſhort Time, ſo that it rendered them unfit for Sale; and we could not by any Means in Life reſcue them, but were obliged to ſuffer the poor Cattle to be deſtroyed by the Mouth of a Cannon; which I was prodigiouſly ſorry for, by Reaſon they could not make any Reſiſtance themſelves.

The Day that our Regiment was relieved out of the Trenches, I went upon a foraging Party. I being the firſt Corporal upon Command, was obliged to go; and as we were marching along about two Miles from *Tournay*, the Sergeant and I turned ourſelves round to admire it, and had ſome Conference about it's Situation. As we were talking, we could diſtinguiſh they had ſprung one of their grand Mines, for we ſaw a prodigious Blaze, and it aſcended up into the Air like unto a Cloud. Upon which I ſaid to the Sergeant, *Methinks I am in Pain, even uncommon Pain, properly Tortures, till I have heard the Effect of what my Eyes have diſcerned; and I ſhall be very impatient till we return.* He ſaid, *I am ſurpriſed you ſhould make yourſelf uneaſy for others Misfortunes.* I told him, *I was ſurpriſed he ſhould ſpeak with ſuch Imprudence; for a Man had better never have been born, than not have a Feeling for his Fellow-Creature, or not think of his Preſervation.* He gave me no Anſwer, but proceeded in that obſtinate ſelfiſh Opinion; and I could ſcarce gather a Word from him all the Time of our Abſence

ſence from the Army. But at our Return I made a ſtrict Inquiſition, and found there was almoſt a whole Regiment of the *Scotch Hollanders* blown up. There was likewiſe a Kind of Report ſpread throughout all our Army, that it was their Intention to blow us all up; but to prevent them we were continually in Motion. As for my Part, I endeavoured to be as active as I could, for I mounted Guard as Sergeant upon a working Party, and took them to a Mine, in order to work at a Sap. There I deſired they would be as expeditious as they could, leſt they ſhould meet with any Obſtruction at that Juncture. Some of the Men came running up to the Sap's Mouth, and left their Baſkets behind them. I aſked, *What was the Matter?* Their Reply was, *That the Enemy was going to ſpring a Mine.* I aſked the Reaſon of that Imagination. They made Anſwer, *That they could hear them plainly.* With that I ſaid, *Come, my Boys, I will go along with you, and ſee or hear if I can the Danger.* I went along the Sap, and they with me, and as ſoon as I came to the far Side, I could perceive their Employment was like unto ours; therefore I ſaid to our Men, *I don't apprehend any Danger while they are pecking; therefore don't be afraid that any thing can befal you while they are at Work in your Hearing, but when you find they have left off, acquaint me, and I will take Care and bring you out of all Danger.* With that they all went to work, and carried their Number of Baſkets very willingly. But after they had done their Duty,

my

my old Friend *James Lamb* ſaid, *He did not half like that under Ground Work, but any above Ground he ſhould readily comply to.* There was another Man that was remarkable for a great Eater, his Name was *John Jones*, who belonged to Captain *Cutler*'s Company: He ſaid he was prodigious hungry. With that the Men aſked him how many Cannon Balls he had eaten for his Breakfaſt. Then I ſaid to him, *Thou deſerveſt Preferment, if thou canſt digeſt Cannon Balls.* Then Sergeant *Smith* came up to me, and told me, *He had eaten four or ſix twenty-four Pounders, and as many ſix or twelve Pounders in a Morning for his Breakfaſt.* Now this Sergeant was not addicted to tell fabulous Stories, though it ſeemed incredible to any one's Thinking. But he explained it in this Manner, that the Man often frequented the Fields in Search of thoſe Cannon Balls; that he had uſed to dig them out of the Banks, and had brought a great Number in a Morning to the Artillery, in order to diſpoſe of them for Money; and the Money he bought his Proviſion with. Had there been no Cannon Balls flying, he certainly could not have ſubſiſted; for he both eat and drank more than ten moderate Men: So that his daily Study was to provide for his Belly. Then I could not help thinking, that if the Queen's whole Army had ſuch an Appetite, that the Allowance would go but a little Way towards providing for their Stomach. This Man, however, made plentiful Proviſion for himſelf; for a Number of Balls, beyond any one's

one's Imagination, came ſinging by us, and I ſaid to him, *hark, hark, don't you hear the ſinging Birds over your Head.* He and the reſt gave little Attention, and I had but juſt ſpoke the Word, before one flew into a Man's face not two Yards from me, and took his Head clean off from his Shoulders. It had ſo much effect on me, that it turned me quite round, and I was a little ſurpriſed and began to look about, and ſaw the Man's Body without a Head, and my Coat covered with his Brains. So I thought it high time to retire from that Station, and go to my reſpective Poſt, leſt any one of thoſe ſinging Birds ſhould take a fancy to me and ſerve me in the ſame Sauce.

All the warm Reception the *French* could give us did not any ways diſcourage our Army, and we inveſted them in ſuch a manner as to cut off all their Communications, and they found at laſt, there were no hopes of Relief except they could fight their way through our Army. But as there was but little Proſpect of their ſucceeding in that, they were obliged to capitulate and relinquiſh all their ſtrong Holds. This happened in a right Time for us; for had they delayed it a little longer, we ſhould have had their numerous Army upon ours, as we were at ſo ſhort a Diſtance from each other.

When we had completed that great Work, our General had Orders to march with all the Expedition imaginable, and I will venture to ſay that he led on briſkly; and the Men did not want for Encouragement upon the March.

We

We marched all Night, and greateſt part of the next Day, before we came to the Ground where we pitched our Tents at the Sun going down. It was juſt under one of the *French* Lines where we took up our Quarters that Night, and in the Morning early the General beat. I jumpt up and awaked thoſe that were aſleep, that they might be ready at the Word of Command. For my part I was animated to ſuch a Degree that my Soul was in Raptures, thinking that we were going upon ſome Expedition, wherein I might have an Opportunity to exert myſelf, and the Men ſeeing me in ſuch Spirits, were enlivened ſo much that they forgot their long March.

The World may ſay it is a very uncommon Thing, for ſuch an inſignificant Fellow as I, to have ſuch Influence over the Men. But yet it is certain, my Word has fled through the whole Regiment in a Minute. What gave me this Aſcendant over them was my making up their Deficiencies, and by ſo doing I had them always at my Beck. What could a Man of my Station deſire more? I always thought it a Bleſſing from the Almighty, therefore I threw my Life and Fortune before him. He ſaved my Life, but my Fortune was divided amongſt Thouſands for my Country's Good: Though now I begin to miſs it, hoping they will conſider the old Soldier, and the Well-wiſher to that Employment, and that will compenſate for my paſt Service, and render me capable to exert myſelf againſt the *French* at this Critical Juncture;

as we did at the following Battle of *Malplaquet*, or the Battle of the Wood, which all the World muſt own was as bold an attempt as ever the World did produce.

The Enemy had the Advantage of the Wood, which would have rendered them capable of deſtroying the greateſt part of us, had they not been intimidated. When we came near the Wood, we threw all our Tent Polls away, and ran into it as bold as Lions. But we were obſtructed from being ſo expeditious as we ſhould, by Reaſon of their artful Inventions, by cutting down Trees and laying them acroſs, and by tying the Boughs together in all Places. This they thought would fruſtrate us, and put us into diſorder, and in Truth there were but very few Places in that Station in which we could draw up our Men, in any form at all; but where we did it was in this manner. Sometimes ten deep, then we were obſtructed and obliged to halt, then fifteen deep or more, and in this confuſed manner we went through the Wood, but yet all in high Spirits, which was ſomething extraordinary after ſo great Fatigue. Our brave Duke of *Marlborough*, and all the other commanding Officers in general, were ſenſible of the advantageous Ground the Enemy had at that Action. Beſides the Wood, *Mons* was in our Rear, which obliged us to have a detachment of a hundred Men out of every Regiment, that was at the Siege of the Citadel of *Tournay*, in order block it up. This was a great weakening to us, at the moſt dangerous attack

Man

Man can deviſe, for we were environed round on all ſides by our Enemies, and were obliged to fight our way through the midſt of them, to ſupport our Honour and Self-preſervation. We fought the Battle, but I will acknowledge that God gained the Victory: For without him we could have done nothing of ourſelves. Theſe were my Thoughts all the time we were placing ourſelves in a Form, that we might be in a Capacity to receive their warm Charge, which was done at the Edge or Border of the Wood. Then we caſt our Eyes upon a Breaſt-work that was not above half a Furlong from the Wood, to which Sir *Richard Temple*, who commanded our Brigade, ordered us to advance. I was in Front of the firſt Diviſion, and could perceive the *French* were well prepared to give us a warm Salute. It ſoon broke us in a terrible manner, though our Vacancies were quickly filled up. I was prodigious ſorry, to ſee our Lieutenant Colonel *Ramſey* ſhot dead, and expire in a Moment. Nay I was obliged to ſqueeze my right hand Man, or I could not have avoided ſtepping upon him; which I was unwilling to do, though he could not have felt me. When we got clear of the dead and wounded we ran upon them, and returning their Fire, even drove them out of the Breaſt-work. Then they retreated to another, but in a confuſed manner. Then we were commanded to fall off to the Right, that the ſecond Battalion might draw themſelves up in a Body, in order to exert themſelves as we did before. A *Dutch* Regiment

at the ſame time behaved with a great deal of Courage and Conduct. The *Welch* Fuſiliers, made our Ground good at the Breaſt-work that we had deprived them of. I could perceive upon the Right of our Battalion, the ſecond Battalion of Guards fired by Platoons, and behaved incomparably well. Neither were the *French* deficient in their Attack, but both ſides behaved to Admiration; therefore we ſaid one to another, *the Guards are endeavouring to gain their Honour.* The Reaſon of that Saying was, old Soldiers had uſed to call them *Vain*'s Army; becauſe they were always uſed to fine Service, and never to ſuffer the Hardſhips that others are ſubject to. But what I diſliked them for was, the Moment they had gone through their Battalion with their Platoon firing, they behaved themſelves like Black-guards, by plundering their own Dead, and pulling them about before they were cold or quite dead. So that my Bowels yearned for their Cruelty. Thus I found they fought for Gain; and I am afraid there are too many of that Stamp.

The next Attack we could diſtinguiſh, that there were ſome Miſunderſtandings among the *French*, which roſe to great Diſputes, and all through a froward Commander. While they were a jarring our brave Commander Sir *Richard Temple* made up to them, in order to learn the Difference that ſubſiſted between them, and by ſo doing he diſranked them; and ended all Diſputes by a Volley of Fire-arms, that rendered a great number of them inſenſible of knowing what

what had paſt. Then they returned our Volley with great Succeſs. I may ſay it, for my right and left hand Man were ſhot dead, and in falling had almoſt thrown me down, for I could ſcarce prevent my falling among the dead Men. Then I ſaid to the ſecond Rank, *come, my Boys, make good the Front.* With that they drew up. Then I ſaid, *never fear, we ſhall have better Luck the next Throw.* But I juſt ſaved my Word, for my right hand Man was ſhot through the Head, and the Man that followed me was ſhot through the Groin, and I eſcaped all, though nothing but the Providence of God could protect me. Then our rear Man was called up to be a Front; but the poor Man was ſtruck with a Panick, fearing that he ſhould ſhare the ſame Fate as the others did. He endeavoured to half cover himſelf behind me, but I put my Hand behind me and pulled him up, and told him, *that I could no ways ſkreen him,* for he was ſenſible a Man behind me was ſhot. By ſtrong Perſuaſion I prevailed upon him, ſo that he was not in the leaſt daunted, but ſtood it out as bold as a Lion. We received a great many Vollies after that, and one time I remember it wounded my Captain and took my left hand Man, and almoſt ſwept off thoſe that were on my Right, ſo that it left the Man that was intimidated, and myſelf alone. Then I ſaid, *come, Partner, there is nothing like having good Courage.* So we filled up our Ranks in a regular Form, and when we had ſo done, we fired upon them briſkly and with great Succeſs: For they were repulſed,

and almoſt afraid to face us any more, after our ſharp firing, but were glad to retreat, and fall back as faſt as they could. Then we caſt our Eyes to the left, and could perceive a Breaſt-work: I could diſtinguiſh that the *French* were lining it with all the Expedition imaginable. Upon that I had ſome Conference with my Colonel, and told him that without great Care we ſhould be flank'd. He was a Man of a polite Genius, and I could obſerve that he had a great deal of Conduct to guide his Actions, which was a great Addition to his Profeſſion, eſpecially at that Juncture where thouſands of Lives were depending. After our noble Colonel had heard my Diſcourſe, he called to Sir *Richard Temple* and ſaid, that his Battalion would be flank'd. He replied, *no, go on yet, Colonel, for there is an abſolute Neceſſity for it.* We were eager to go on, for we deſired to be expeditious in our Attack. With that the Colonel called to Sir *Richard* again, and ſaid, *if he muſt go on, he would go on.* Then the Aid de Camp came and ſaid, *go on*, but the Colonel ſpoke firſt, and ſaid, *wheel to the left of the Battalion.* Thoſe words we obſerved, and as ſwift as Thought we ran upon their Breaſt-works with a huzza, and gave them a warm Fire, which made them tumble one over another. At the ſame time, the *Welch* Fuſiliers being upon the right of them, flank'd them with a kind Salute, which jammed them together in their Breaſt-works. So we did not give them time to plunder their Dead, neither did they approve of it, leſt we ſhould increaſe

creaſe their number of Corps. I would not have you think the *French* were idle, for as our Battalion was running upon the Breaſt-works they fired upon us and killed a great number, though inferior to their own. Then we had Orders to wheel to the right. Had we not the *French* Horſe would certainly have fallen upon our Rear. This happened at the Ground where we firſt made our Attack. But when we faced them, they backed their Horſes as faſt as they could, and we advanced and retreated in the Front of them, for a conſiderable time, till they opened to the Right and Left. Then they advanced forward. With that we fell back a little and made a Halt. Our Commander, Sir *Richard Temple*, was very active, and ſhewed a great deal of Ingenuity at that Juncture. I could perceive it by the Orders. Our Colonel ordered the Drum to beat a March; accordingly they did, though our marching was very ſlow; but we lifted up our Feet as faſt as we could, in ſuch a manner that they imagined we were coming bodily upon them. With that the Horſe would fall back and make a Halt, and we did in like manner. This was the Method we uſed advancing and retreating, till ſuch time as their Foot thought proper to make off. Then the Horſe thought fit to make all the Haſte they could after them, ſo it was properly a general Retreat. Then we were commanded to purſue, which we did, but to no purpoſe. I remember when we mounted a Hill we could perceive they were upon another oppoſite to us, and ſent us a Salute by the

Mouth of three Cannon, as an Adieu; the firſt Cannon Ball graſed in the Front but did no Damage at all, and the Colonel deſired we would lye down, for we ſhould have another or two and we found it as he obſerved. After three Cannons were fired we got up in high Spirits, for we were under no Apprehenſions of having any more: So that did not much obſtruct us, in making our Purſuit; and we ſoon put the *French* to the run. But it availed us little, having only occaſioned the *French* to get into Gariſon ſooner than they would have done, had not we purſued them.

As we found they were determined not to face us any more, we returned to our Army, or the Ground we gained by our Dexterity, and artful Inventions. It being the cloſe of the Day, we all began to think of Reſt, and having no Tents to fix, we were obliged to take up with ſuch Quarters as we could find. We were all diſperſed in a ſhort Time, ſome in one place, and ſome in another. I remember well, after I had pitched upon whom I thought proper to go along with me, I perceived a Houſe at ſome diſtance, whither we all agreed to go together, hoping to find it empty. But we found it the reverſe, for it was full of miſerable Objects, that were diſabled and wounded in ſuch a manner that I thought them paſt all Recovery. Therefore I ſaid to my Companions, *I don't think there is a Poſſibility of our having any Reſt this Night.* We endeavoured to the utmoſt of our Ability to get out of the Noiſe of the wounded, but

but found it almoſt impoſſible, except we had gone three or four Miles diſtance, for all the Hedges and Ditches were lined with diſabled Men. Therefore we returned to an Orchard and laid ourſelves down in as warm a Place as we could find, but the horrible Cries and Groans of the wounded terrified my Soul, ſo that I was in Tortures and fancied I felt their Sufferings. So I could not lay my Eye-lids together all that Night, for one Thought or other that came freſh into my Mind, after the Agony I was in for my Fellow Creatures. In the firſt place, I conſidered myſelf as a great Debtor to the all-ſeeing Power of the Almighty for his ineſtimable Goodneſs towards me, for conducting me through that glorious Victory where nothing but the Hand of God could be our Aſſiſtant. I can juſtly ſay it by Experience in regard to myſelf, for I was encompaſſed round with Dead; at the firſt Attack my Colonel was ſhot dead before me, then I had a Man ſhot behind me, and twice my right and left hand Men were ſhot. Thouſands would think it morally impoſſible to eſcape in ſuch a Caſe; but Impoſſibilities with Man, are poſſible with God. Therefore it reminded me of our Saviour's Words, *that a Sparrow ſhould not fall to the Ground without his Permiſſion.* Then I could not help thinking that I ſhould always be a Debtor, never able to compenſate for ſo great a Bleſſing. My Soul was ſtill very thoughtful, and I remembered the Words of King *William*, that *every Ball that kills or wounds has his Com-*

miſſion before it is fired. The Reaſon of that Thought was, the Balls went through my Clothes, even through my Hat; and one time I remember when a Cannon Ball took my Shirt-Sleeve off. Now I can ſay by learned Experience, neither of thoſe Balls had a Commiſſion to kill or wound. Therefore I will ſay once more, that Providence was my chief Conductor, and thoſe that truſt in any Thing elſe to aid them, will truſt to a broken Staff. Theſe were my Thoughts while others ſlept.

In the Morning all the ſeparated got together again, to receive Orders; accordingly we were commanded to bury our Dead, and when we had ſo done, there were Orders iſſued out to get ſome Tent-polls, in order that we might form our Camp. As we entered into the Wood, I caſt my Eyes around and ſaw two Men almoſt naked and prodigiouſly wounded; I could perceive they were ſomething better than private Men, though not by their Apparel. I aſked them ſeveral Queſtions, but the chief thing I underſtood was they ſaid they were Captains of the *French*; at the ſame time my Bowels yearned for them with Tenderneſs of Heart. Therefore I got all the Rags together I could, in order to cover them. Humanity obliged me to it; and I think it intolerable to plunder the Living as well as the Dead. For my own part I could never have Patience to ſee Barbarity uſed after a Battle, for my Soul was always in Pain for the wounded upon the account of the cruel Uſage they met with, when they fell into the Hands

of thoſe that have no feeling for either God or Man, which was the Fate of theſe two unfortunate Men. When I left them, they rendered me a thouſand Thanks, but I always thought there was a Duty incumbent on me to act as I did, therefore there was no need of all theſe Thanks, when a Man is bound in Duty to be humane.

Theſe were my Thoughts during the time of our getting the Tent-polls, and when we returned to the Place appointed to form our Camp in, I found there was ſomething in Agitation. Therefore I made a ſtrict Enquiry, but could have no Intelligence till we had formed our Camp. Then I found there were Orders iſſued out, for an Army to go and lay Siege to *Mons*. Though I was not there, yet I was deſirous of going to ſee the hundred Men that were detach'd out of our Regiment before the former Battle was begun, in order to prevent the *French* having ſo much Influence over us, in caſe we had not been ſo ſucceſsful as to have gained the Field: For they might very poſſibly have drawn themſelves out of Gariſon, and purſued us as we did them. But as our Men were planted in ſuch a manner, that there was no Poſſibility of their coming out without receiving a warm Reception, they thought it prudent to continue there, till ſuch time as we had an Opportunity to oblige them to relinquiſh their ſtrong Hold, and take them by Violence: I began to be impatient and longed to be with them; therefore I took an Opportunity and went to take a Review of their Performances, and it happened

the

the Day that they beat a Parley. At my Appearance upon the Spot, I could perceive upon the Breaches a great Number of jolly Men to look at, then I ſaid to our Men, *why do you let thoſe Men ſtand there as an Ornament?* Likewiſe I obſerved to our Army, *that thoſe were the Pickings of the* French *Army:* I ſaid again, *it was not the Bulk of the Man that doth Execution, but the lively active Man that is the beſt Soldier; for Example, don't you all remember the Stripling that ſlew* Goliah, *therefore a little Man ſhould not be intimidated at the Sight of a helpleſs Body, a Body without a Heart.* Such Converſation I had with our Men, after the Parley. So that we were extremely merry, and we had Reaſon enough for Mirth, for we had ſucceeded in every Thing we undertook that Year.

I returned to our Camp with great Joy, that we had completed and done every Thing effectually that was requiſite to finiſh our Campaign. Then all Preparation imaginable was made for marching. I remember our Regiment marched with the Artillery and Baggage, in order to conduct it to our reſpective Quarters. We marched upon the Cauſeway, that was reported to be made on purpoſe for the *French* to draw their Artillery from *Bruſſels* to *Mons*, which was a great many Miles diſtance from each other. So we diverted ourſelves with one thing or other, which made it a pleaſant March to *Ghent*. Now I will take the Liberty of cloſing this Year up, to the Memory of his Grace the Duke of *Marlborough*, who was once, what never was before,

nor

nor ever will be after, a Man of the greateſt Conduct and Vigor; and I dare ſay, that what we did that Year, through the Inſtigation of that brave Duke, ever will endure ſo long as *Blenheim* Houſe ſtands in *Woodſtock* Park *Oxfordſhire*. The laſt time I rode through it, it revived my Soul to ſee the Statue of that brave *Engliſh* Man, whom none can outdo, and I believe in Juſtice none will gainſay but corroborate my Opinion.

CHAP. XXV.

The Siege of Doway *in* 1710: Bouchain *taken: St.* Venant *and* Aire *beſieged: Remarkable Incidents before the latter: Manner of living in the Trenches.*

IN 1710 I went round to all our Regiment in Order to enliven them by ſaying, *if we ſucceeded the next Campaign, it would be a Means to break the Hearts of the* French. They all agreed to my Sentiments, and ſaid, *they did not doubt it in the leaſt; as they had been obſtructed hitherto, their feeble Hearts would not ſerve them to exert themſelves this enſuing Campaign.* Then I made anſwer, *that they would be intimidated at the Sight of us, and it would ſtrike ſuch a Terror into their Breaſts as would oblige them to ſurrender. They have not Hearts like us, if they had it might prove our Deſtruction! Therefore let us drink Succeſs to her Majeſty's Arms, and let it go round merrily; for the Support of her*

moſt excellent Majeſty relies upon the Heart only, therefore I don't doubt but you will all be candid enough to think as I do. This was my daily Advice, for ten Days before we ſet out for the Camp; though it was the occaſion of my expending ſome Pounds; but I did not value my Money, ſo long as I could accompliſh my intended Deſire, by my Remonſtrance. I always thought that ſufficiently compenſated my Trouble, this was the Recreation that I applied, which created a great deal of Delight, ſo that we left *Ghent* in high Spirits, and marched to the Plains of *Doway*, where we encamped.

At that Juncture, part of our Army went off, in order to beſiege the Town of *Doway*; that animated me to the higheſt Degree imaginable, thinking there was ſome Proſpect of Employment. Therefore I ſaid to my Converſants, *What do you think of it now, Gentlemen? How far will your Judgment carry you, ſhall we ſucceed in this Attempt or not?* They replied, *They did not doubt of ſucceeding in that and in every thing elſe we ſhould undertake this Year.* I anſwered, *May it be ſo in God's Name, and I don't queſtion but that it will be a Means to break the Heart of the War, or at leaſt render us capable of taking what we deſire without the uſe of Fire-arms. For methinks I can perceive their Army in horrible Fears, though at this diſtance, which was about a League.* They made anſwer, *If ſo, we certainly ſhall find it as you ſay, for they will make little or no Reſiſtance after this Year, if they are ſtruck with a Panick already. Gentlemen,*

men, ſaid I, *if they are or are not, pray give me your Opinion whether it is an Act of Prudence or not, for a Soldier to think ſo.* They anſwered, Biſhop, *we know that you are of a diſtinguiſhing Capacity, therefore we will refer it to your Judgment, and when we have had your Approbation, then we will ſpeak. Gentlemen, you honour me greatly in giving me the Preference; but ſince you require it I will give you my Sentiments in a few Words.* 'Suppoſe any of you, Gentlemen, were ſenſible of another's being afraid of you, you would fight couragiouſly till ſuch time as you had got the better of him; but if you thought the reverſe, it is very poſſible you might be afraid to look him in the Face. I don't think all Mankind of that Diſpoſition, but I am afraid the greateſt Number are. Therefore hitherto it has been my daily Study to inſpire that true Courage that might avail us, when we come to engage. I am ſenſible, through my Inſtigation, you have done more than one could imagine, and following this Rule I ſhall always look on it as the beſt Means to enſure the Safety of any Army.

'*Biſhop*, ſaid they, we can't diſprove what you ſay, and like your Notion well, being convinced that Man may be wrought on by Arguments to exert himſelf with more Vigor and Conduct; therefore there is nothing like ſpiriting Men up, eſpecially in the time of Battle, where nothing but lively Courage can ſupport them, and on it is their whole Dependance.'

In

In this manner we held a Confabulation. Then a ſudden Thought came into my Head, that as the *French* Army lay on the other ſide of *Artois*, and *Vitry*, places almoſt upon a Line, I could like to go and dare them to Action, or at leaſt keep them in a perpetual Motion. It was not long before I had my Deſire, for I was appointed as one to go upon a Major's Command. I was highly diverted that I ſhould be upon that Command, becauſe it fulfilled my Deſire. I remember when we came within a Furlong of the *French*, we put ourſelves in a Poſture to receive them, if they thought proper to attack us; but they thought it prudent to continue within their Breaſt-works, which were at the End of a Lane, proceeding from a Mill. At the ſaid Mill we made all the Expedition we could, in making another to anſwer theirs.

When we had compleated it, there was a very uncommon Thing happened, which I think proper to relate here. A Sergeant, that belonged to my Lord *Hartford*'s Regiment, had a Siſter in the *French* Service; he was very deſirous of going to make an Enquiry after her; therefore he took Courage, and aſked the Major Leave, who readily gave his Conſent. With that the Sergeant went off, in order to make a ſtrict Inquiſition after her, and ſhe readily came to him. The Joy they expreſſed at Meeting were inconceivable, and created a great deal of Mirth, both amongſt our Officers, and private Men in general. I remember ſhe brought a

Bottle

Bottle of Brandy in order to treat her Brother, and they were in great Raptures during the Time they continued together. In the Interim our Officers were prodigious jocular and pleasant, and desired the Woman to sit down in Company with them. They were a jovial Crew, and drank round the Table like Sons of *Bacchus*. The Woman, being in excessive high Spirits, was as quick with her Repartees as possible. In the first Place our Officers boasted of our Provisions being far better than the *French* Army's, *that we had good Beef, Bacon, and extremely fine Geneva*; *good Bread, and, above all, the* English *Pay was double that of the* French. One would have imagined these were Arguments sufficient to work upon a Woman's Heart; but all they said had no Effect on her. She told them, *She thought the* French *Provisions were preferable to ours*; *that all the World would allow their Bread to be better than that of any other Nation*; *they had fine juicy Beef, none better to her Palate*; *and Brandy enough, which revived her Soul*; *what could a Woman desire more?* Such like Conversation passed between our Officers and the Woman as they sat all round the Table. But her Stay created a Jealousy in the *French*, so that they sent a Drum over their Breast-works to our Guard. Then we sent another to their's. Upon this, one of the *French* Officers came over, and advanced forward; and one of our's went and met him half way. They saluted each other with a great deal of Ceremony, and a great many Compliments

ments paſſed between them. Then they both returned to their reſpective Poſts, and ſoon after we ſent the Woman and a Drum in order to conduct her ſafe; upon which they ſent back our's. But the poor Sergeant's Joy was turned to Mourning; for he took on greatly, when he ſaw himſelf diſappointed of getting his Siſter into our Army. Soldiers are Men that one may depend upon their keeping their Word of Honour, and they never forfeit it to each other, after they have paſſed it. And in Truth, no Man could be called honourable, who did any thing for Gain, or Intereſt of any Kind. Thus in Juſtice they could not keep the Woman, but were obliged to ſubmit for their Word Sake.

In the Evening we planted a Sentry, and they another. The two Guards were only about forty Paces diſtant, and the Officers took it into their Heads, as they had made themſelves ſo free by Day, to be ſociable and converſe together by Night, which was contrary to military Diſcipline. Therefore Orders were iſſued out to forbear aſſociating with each other, unleſs they were reſolved to incur the Puniſhment inflicted in ſuch Caſes. This put an End to all their Conferences; and it was abſolutely neceſſary at that critical Juncture, as the *French* are the fitteſt People in the World to decoy a free generous hearted Man. Their Looks and Behaviour are all Complaiſance and Kindneſs, but their Hearts are full of Deceit; therefore there is no Safety where they dwell.

When

When we left that Ground, we marched in order to cover the Siege of *Doway*. The *French* were exaſperated, and made an Attempt to ſurprize us. Therefore it was thought prudent to entrench ourſelves, and when we had ſo done, we made a large Fire, and the *French* ſeeing it, advanced forward towards it. When they came near, we deſired they would not make any Scruple of coming to warm themſelves if they were a cold. They thought it too difficult a Matter to force our Line, therefore they looked upon it and made off, being ſenſible we were otherways employed, and could not conveniently reckon with them till we had completed our Deſign, which was to burn ſeveral Houſes, in order to deprive them of all the Shelter we could. When we had ſo done, it diſcouraged them greatly, and rendered them unfit to make a ſecond Attempt, knowing we were ſo well prepared. Thus it was not long before the Town of *Doway* was obliged to ſurrender. Upon this I ſaid, *Come, my Boys, there is ſomething to begin with; and we ſhall make every Thing ſubmit to us this Year.*

After we had left that Ground, we made all the Expedition we could for *Bethune*, which was cloſely inveſted by our Army; that terrified their Souls, and rendered them unfit for any thing but to come into our Meaſures. After that was taken, I could not help pleaſing myſelf with the Thoughts of accompliſhing ſo great an Enterprize, or making ſome Obſervations during the Time of our Continuance at that

Ground. I ſaid to our Men, *What do you think of it now? Has not our brave Duke of* Marlborough *completed every Thing I foretold you? And I don't queſtion if the War was to continue ſeven Years longer, but he would utterly demoliſh all the* French *Gariſons. You all find, it is in vain to fight againſt the providential Power of the Almighty; for through his ineſtimable Goodneſs the Battle may be gained without Bloodſhed; for it is not always by the Force of Fire Arms, nor by the Sword of Steel, that the Victory is obtained.* Some gave true Attention to what had been ſaid, but ſome would ſay, *What ſignifies minding that Nonſenſe?* Therefore I thought it high Time to ceaſe my Inſtructions; for when they once ſcoffed at my Reproof, I never could apply to them again, till ſuch Time as they reflected on themſelves. But how imprudent is it in Man to drive Things off till there is not a Poſſibility of having Relief! Surely they have nothing but a diabolical Spirit in them; if they had not, they certainly would be compliable; but while that over-ruling Spirit is in them, I don't wonder at their Deſtruction.

When we left that Ground, we went off in two Diviſions, in order to beſiege St. *Venna*, and *Aire*. I remember well theſe following Regiments went off under the Command of Prince *Hannau* to *Aire*, my Lord *Orkney*'s, Lord *Hartford*'s, the Queen's, General *Godfrey*'s and *Kean*'s. We all went off in high Spirits, hoping to have Succeſs. This animated the major Part of us to ſuch a Degree, that we were very

very expeditious in our marching, till ſuch Time as we had *Aire* in our View. Then we drew our ſelves up in Form.

At that Time I was forming an Idea of the Place in my Mind, and conſulting within myſelf how we might proceed, it being a Place of great Force, where we were ſure to receive great Annoyance, before we had completed our Deſigns. Yet this Proſpect did not in the leaſt diſcourage me: Though I believe the greateſt Part of Men in my Sphere have no Notion of defending themſelves againſt Annoyance, but are like an Ox that is taken to the Slaughter, that cannot diſtinguiſh whether he is in Danger or not. Thoſe Men that are thus inſenſible, will run on fool-hardily, and think to ſtorm Caſtles by looking upon them, without uſing any Ingenuity at all in order to preſerve their own Lives. Now I will venture to ſay thoſe Men wilfully ſeek their own Deſtruction; they are not worthy to be called Soldiers, but Madmen: But I made them ſenſible of their Default, and told them the Conſequence of Things, which did in ſome Meaſure convince them of their Error. *Gentlemen*, ſaid I, *we ſhall have Employment enough in making Faſcines and Gabions, in order to make a complete Parapet or Battery. It is abſolutely neceſſary to raiſe a Breaſt-work, to prevent the Annoyance of their Cannon and ſmall Shot, that will fall upon us like ſo much Hail; if it was not for thoſe Inventions, we ſhould be utterly demoliſhed.* In this Manner I converſed with thoſe whom I ſaw

ignorant of the Affair, and they found it as I obſerved.

We had as fine a Time as the Heavens could produce, to form our Siege, and to put ourſelves in a Capacity to receive their warm Reception: Though we had Reaſon enough to be intimidated, had we not had Hearts like Lions to carry on the Siege with Conduct and Vigor. Neither did we want for Encouragement; for his Royal Highneſs the Prince of *Hannau* would walk backward and forward in the Trenches, and ſay, *Come, brave* Engliſhmen, *I am determined not to have this Beard cut off, till ſuch Time as the Town ſurrenders.* Reader, I leave you to judge, whether it was not a fine black Beard of ten Weeks Growth. But by that Means he enlivened our Men, and it rendered them capable of doing their Duty to Admiration. However, *Webb*'s Regiment was prodigiouſly ſhattered; for we went off in working Parties, and ſometimes as we were working there would a Shell fall amongſt the Midſt of us, and blow up in a Moment. But for my Part, I knew how to deal with thoſe terrible Engines, and prevailed upon ſome to do as I did; that was to fall down like one dead. But there were ſome that would not be made ſenſible of their Danger from it, and would ſtep over it one after another. I ſaid, *That is a fine Thing to play with.* The Word was hardly out of my Mouth, before it burſt aſunder, tore them that ſtepped over it in Pieces, and killed ſeveral others at a great Diſtance; but I and

ſome others that had taken my Advice, were not above three Yards, and received little or no Damage. Then I ſaid, *Look there, through their Obſtinacy they ſuffer Death.* The Men were enamoured with me, and ſaid, *Our Lives are owing to you.* I made Anſwer, *No, it was not in my Power to ſave your Lives, but the Providence of God directed that I ſhould be the chief Inſtrument of your Preſervation.*

It was not long before I was commanded to take twelve Men upon a working Party. I was very unhappy in that Command, by Reaſon there were ſeven or eight of them that diſapproved of my Advice ſome Time before, and called it Nonſenſe. Therefore I muſt needs own I was ſtruck with a Panick, fearing ſomething extraordinary ſhould befal us upon their Account, for they were mere Reprobates; and I believe, if in their Power, they would have been guilty of every Thing that was vile. But you'll find they were prevented. As I marched them along, there came from the Gariſon a Cannon Ball that knocked down ſix of the eight. One would think that almoſt impoſſible; but what my Eyes have ſeen I can juſtify. I ſaid, *Look there are ſix wallowing in their Gore, that have often exclaimed againſt my Sentiments.* Then the other two reflected on themſelves, and ſaid, *Now we own there is ſuch a Thing as Providence, and that nothing but the Hand of God could direct that Ball to kill ſix, and leave the reſt ſtanding.* So there were two converted by the others Deſtruction,

and they behaved themſelves like Men upon their Command, and ever after ſhewed me ſome Reſpect, being very deſirous of being employed where I could overlook them. But that could not always be, for I was continually in Action; if not in the working Parties, I was otherways engaged.

Then I remember I was commanded to take ſix Men along with me to a certain Place, in order to keep a conſtant firing. Accordingly I did, but when we came to the Place appointed, I found it would not admit of perpetual firing; for we were obliged to get up and down: Therefore, after the firſt Round, I deſired the Men would ſtand in the Trenches below, and load as faſt as they could, and I would get up and fire as faſt as they could hand me up the Firelocks, that it might be called a continual Firing. The Men were highly pleaſed with my Propoſal, knowing that it was a Place the Enemy had a great Suſpicion of, and great Numbers had been killed and wounded upon the Spot. But I was not in the leaſt intimidated at the Sight of dead Men, but went to my Station, and planted myſelf in as firm a Poſture as I could. I made my Hole bigger by moving my Sand-bags, in order that I might have ſufficient Room to put my Firelock in with Eaſe. Then I levelled and fired with great Succeſs, for I took particular Notice of their Flaſhes, and by that Means I believe did great Execution. I believe it was as warm an Engagement as ever Man undertook; for the Balls would come dab

dab

dab againſt the Sand-bags, that one would have imagined it was almoſt impoſſible to eſcape being killed; for I have had them come through the Hole where I put my Firelock. They would create a Blaſt of Air, but nothing to prejudice me; ſo I continued in that Manner till I was relieved; but I had three or four Hours continual firing firſt; which made all the Firelocks ſo prodigious hot, that I could not endure my Hand upon the Barrels, and likewiſe gave all the Men a moderate Sweat by loading. You may imagine I was very hot with firing, for it is hard Work, eſpecially to follow it as I did. This was the Method I took, and by ſo doing I gained the Love of all our Regiment; and in Truth, none of the Army that had any Knowledge of me, but what loved to be upon a Command with me; and for my Part, I have made Intereſt to go upon ſome Expedition or other, and thought myſelf happy when in Action.

But I was obliged to return to our Regiment, and it was not long after that it was relieved. We met ſome of the *Brandenburgh* Guards juſt coming out of the Trenches, in order to cut off ſome of the Ground from the Gariſon, but the Enemy endeavoured to prevent them, for they threw ſeveral Shot amongſt them, which killed a great Number. Notwithſtanding, the others, with a great deal of Conduct, completed their Deſign. I remember one Time we were in Expectation of a Sally; for the Enemy mounted over the Trenches before Break of

Day, and prodigious ſtill they were. But I that had my Eyes upon the Surface of the Earth, could perceive that they advanced forward: With that I crept upon the Ground with my Hands and Knees: I was ſo prodigiouſly uſed to that Employment, that I ſlided over the Ground as faſt as ſome could walk: So it was not long before I acquainted the Officer what I had ſeen. He ſaid, Biſhop, *I beg you will act with all the Prudence imaginable, and poſt a Sentry where you think proper.* Accordingly I obeyed, and took a Man and planted him in a Form that he might diſtinguiſh whether any thing moved or not, and deſired him to follow my Directions ſtrictly. *If one or two came by to let them paſs, but if there came three a-breaſt, your Orders are to fire upon them, and make off with all the Expedition you can.*

Our Gentlemen Soldiers in *England* little think of the Hardſhips we endure abroad; therefore I thought proper to make them ſenſible of them at this Juncture. They think it a great Hardſhip to ſtand in a ſentry Box; though had they been in my Place, I am certain they would have found a Difference between lying flat upon the Ground with our Firelocks before us, and ſtanding upon their Legs under Shelter. For my Part, I have thought myſelf the happieſt Man in the World, if any Thing was before me, even ſo ſmall a Thing as a Football. A Man in *England* is not appriſed of thoſe Things, therefore I thought it high Time to acquaint him, leſt he ſhould think

Things

Things hard which are not, in Regard to true military Employment. But as I have given you a Kind of an Abſtract of the Manner in which we performed our Duty, I think proper to explain how we lived in the Trenches. We got two or three Buſhels of Beans, and a Buſhel of Wheat at a Time: So ſome Days we had boiled Beans, and ſometimes when we mounted the Trenches we made ourſelves Dumplings, which we thought extremely good Living. I have often thought it created as good Spirits as roaſt Meat. I think proper to obſerve one Thing more: In the Beginning of the Siege we had very fine Weather, but the latter End was exceſſively wet and uncomfortable; ſo that we were obliged to lay Faſcines upon the Bottom of the Trenches, and Flakes upon that; and by that Means the Water ſunk through all and kept us dry under Foot. Thus we made ourſelves as comfortable as we could, all the Time we continued there. The *Dutch* were of great Uſe to us by bringing us Suſtenance in order to nouriſh and ſtrengthen us againſt the Severity of the Weather; they brought us Geneva and Coffee, and Brotherſkeys. I generally drank Coffee in a Morning, which I found was very refreſhing, after a Night's Duty upon the cold Ground, where we were obliged to relieve one another upon our Hands and Knees, as I obſerved before.

I remember our Regiment was in the Trenches the Morning the beſieged beat a Parley, and I don't believe there was one Man but was prodigiouſly well

well pleaſed with hearing that Signal given; knowing that the Days and the Weather would not admit of much more Exerciſe. When our commanding General had taken Poſſeſſion of the Town, and every Thing was done to their Satisfaction, the Officers in general began to think of going into Gariſon, as there was no Likelihood of any thing more to be done that Year, it being the latter End of *October*, before we obliged the Enemy to ſubmit to us. When we left that Place, we marched directly to *Ghent:* On our Arrival there, we found our Quarters were to be in the Caſtle of Arms, upon St. *Peter*'s Hill; which I was highly delighted with, knowing that I ſhould be kindly received by all my Acquaintance; and I did not flatter myſelf in the leaſt; for their Kindneſs was more than I could have expected, and I was as happy, and lived as much to my Satiſfaction, as any Officer in the Army; which is a bold Word to ſay, from ſuch an inſignificant Fellow as me. Though had not my Converſation been to ſome Purpoſe, in putting every Thing in it's clear Light, I don't think that ever I ſhould have arrived to ſuch a Pitch of Friendſhip as I did; for I had daily Invitation, and at laſt it came without any Compliment at all. What could a Man of my Station deſire more, than the Oil of Grace poured on him daily, which ſtrengthened and refreſhed my Soul and Body, and brought Things into their proper Orb; and for which I thanked my God, knowing that every Thing came through his

ineſtimable Goodneſs and Mercy. Thus I conclude this Year.

CHAP. XXVI.

The Author's Deſire to go on the Expedition to Canada: *Arrives in* New England: Indian *King viſits their Camp near* Boſton: *In great Danger at Sea: Iſſue of the Attempt on* Quebeck: *Returns to* England: Edgar *Man of War blown up: Goes into Winter Quarters at* Shrewſbury.

IN 1711, hearing that our brave Duke of *Marlborough* was gone to *England*, I began to be under ſome Apprehenſion that he would not return; therefore I concluded the Neck of the War was broke, and that I ſhould be diſappointed of the Pleaſure of ſeeing *Paris* that Year; though we were once in Hopes of arriving to that Honour, had not our Conductor been detained in *England*. His Genius and Conduct was deſerving of the honorable Title of Prince of the Holy Empire; for he was beloved by the Generality of Mankind, even Foreigners as well as *Engliſhmen:* Even none could avoid giving him their Praiſe; and he was worthy of all, for his good Diſcipline and good Order; and the greateſt Bleſſing of all, his Succeſs in all his Attempts, which was owing to his profound Knowledge in ſending proper Emiſſaries to obſerve the Enemy's Motions. *Oh!* ſaid I, *muſt we part from ſuch a Man, whoſe Fame has ſpread throughout all the Word?* On

On hearing that it was confirmed that he was no longer to command, it terrified my Soul to ſuch a Degree, that I could not reſt Night or Day, and it obliged me to caſt ſome Reflections; and I believe all Well-wiſhers to *England* will think as I did. *O* England! *it was once in thy Power to have ruined* France; *even to have taken her Capital, and then to have triumphed over her.* But as we then gave the Power out of our own Hands, the *French* are triumphing daily over us, by making a ſecond Attempt to invade us; that is their Return for our Humanity towards them. *O* England, *I hope thou art ſenſible of thy Errors; for they are eaſily to be diſcerned by this clear Light. Thou hadſt it in thy Power one Time to make all Nations ſubmit to thee, and to bring them under thy Juriſdiction; but now they ſay, they will diſpute it with you: Therefore receive me, that I may wage War againſt them ſo long as I am able; for that is entirely what I wiſh for; knowing that the Enemy is deſerving of more than there is a Poſſibility to inflict on them. This Hope ſtrengthens my Courage, and renders me the more capable to exert myſelf; for my Reſolution is the ſame as ever.*

At my hearing that the Duke of *Marlborough* had entirely reſigned his Command, I was determined with a full Reſolution, if nothing prevented me, to go upon the firſt Expedition that ſhould happen; and to my good Fortune I was not baulked in my Deſign; though with ſome Difficulty I obtained that Favour. Upon my hearing that Colonel *Kain*'s Regiment was coming

ing from *Courtray* to *Ghent*, in order to go upon a Deſcent on *Canada*, I thought there might be a Poſſibility of making an Exchange with another Man, that might be unwilling to go upon that Expedition. I flattered myſelf with thoſe Hopes, till ſuch Time as the Regiment came to *Ghent:* Then I went round to all, in order to learn their Sentiments of this Expedition; and by ſo doing, I found that ſeveral would gladly change. Then I found out a Means to get it reported to all the Officers in general, that no Man ſhould go againſt his own Inclination, if they purpoſed any Good of them. Upon this Report the Officers took the Matter into Conſideration, and granted their Requeſt. This ſtrengthened my Hopes. Therefore I made my Application to my Captain, telling him, *I had a great Fancy to go upon this Expedition, and that I knew of a brave jolly Corporal that would exchange with me.* He made Anſwer, Biſhop, *thou art one of the moſt ſurpriſing Men in the World; any reaſonable Man would have thought that your Employment of late would have ſatisfied you, without thinking of new Projects. Beſides, now all the Officers in the Regiment are acquainted with your Behaviour, you need not doubt in the leaſt having Preferment ſoon. Therefore let me intreat you not to think of any ſuch Thing. If you have any Thoughts of raiſing yourſelf in the Army, continue where you are; and not think of going into a young Regiment, for there is no Proſpect of any thing there, only to be broke after the Heat of the War is over. And you may*

take

take my Word, that you will never have the Opportunity of making yourſelf known, as well as you are here. Dear Sir, ſaid I, *your Advice animates my Soul, and I render you a thouſand Thanks for the ſame; but yet pardon me, I muſt endeavour to fulfil my Reſolutions ſo long as I live. Not that I have any Diſlike to the Regiments at all, neither is there any room for Reflections of any kind. But you may diſtinguiſh my Diſpoſition. I came into the Army with an Intention to be of Service to my Queen and Country, therefore I am under ſome Apprehenſions of Fear, that there will little or nothing more be done in this Part of the World. Therefore I beg to exchange. You know I am never happy but in Action. Excuſe me, but I am in hopes of finding what I wiſh for in extraneous Lands. Well,* Biſhop, *as your Reſolution is ſo fully bent upon going, I adviſe you to go to the Colonel, for I can't do any thing without his Approbation.*

So ended our Confabulation, then I went immediately to my Colonel, and ſaid, *Sir, with humble Submiſſion I beg your Honour will be ſo kind as to grant me one Favour, and then as in Duty bound I ſhall ever pray for you. Well,* Biſhop, *what is it you want that I can oblige you in. Sir, I am afraid to divulge it leſt I ſhould incur your Diſpleaſure, and by ſo doing you would obſtruct me in my Deſign.* He being very deſirous of knowing what I wanted that might incur his Diſpleaſure, I took Courage, and told him in a free ſpontaneous Manner, 'I underſtand there is ſomething in Agitation

'that

'that I would gladly come into, as it might 'render me more capable to exert myſelf, or 'at leaſt I might have more Opportunity to be 'of Service to my Fellow-Creatures, than it is 'poſſible I can here. Colonel *Kain*'s Regi- 'ment is going upon the deſcent on *Canada*, 'and hearing that ſeveral have exchanged, I 'take the Liberty of aſking whether I might 'go or not, knowing of a clever Man that will 'exchange with me, if you would be ſo kind 'as to grant me my Requeſt.' '*Biſhop*, re- 'plied he, you don't imagine that we ſhall 'change any of our beſt Men, to go upon ſuch 'an Expedition as that, no, none that we ſet any 'great Value upon.' 'Then, pray Sir, let me 'be one of them.' 'No! ſaid he, I would not 'have you think of going; I thought you might 'have been in Storms enough by Sea, to cure 'you from ever thinking of going again. Like- 'wiſe as you have been at ſo many Atchieve- 'ments by Land to my Knowledge, I ſhall al- 'ways reſpect you, therefore take it from me 'as your Friend, and ſtay where you are, for 'your own Good, and my Satisfaction.' 'Sir, I 'have an Idea, that ſomething might happen 'that may be of great Service, therefore I 'hope you will not detain me from where my 'Inclination leads me; for all that I mean is 'with a good Intent, and I ſhall be very un- 'happy if your Honour don't take it into Con- 'ſideration, for I have an irreſiſtible Spirit in 'me, and can't ſuffer myſelf to be diſappointed 'of my Intentions.' 'He anſwered, he would 'conſider of it.

So

So ended our Conference; but I thought that was not a ſatisfactory Anſwer, therefore I made it my Buſineſs to go from one Officer to another to ſolicit my Caſe, and I found there was a great Meeting upon my Account, and as good Fortune would have it, there were ſeveral that interceded for me, and procured me the Favour. Upon my ſucceeding I went round to all the Officers, thinking it was my Duty to take my Leave of them in a handſom manner. They all acknowledged my paſt Service, and wiſhed me a ſucceſsful Voyage. When I had ſo done I ſpent the Night as jovial as I could, and had Company enough, to make it agreeable; for there were but few in the Regiment but what came and drank with me, by turns, which cauſed ſome Pounds to be expended, and in the Morning there were moſt of our Company ready to accompany me part of the Way. As ſoon as I came without *Bruges* Port at *Ghent* I diveſted myſelf, thinking it was not improper to exchange my Clothes as well as my Perſon. I was in Major *Allen*'s Company who received me kindly, and we marched merrily along in the Road to *Oſtend*, and I believe my old Comrades had a Mind to go along with me; for I had much to do to prevail upon them, to part from me, before we came to *Oſtend*. But at laſt, by my Perſuaſions they returned, though they all ſhed Tears, and ſaid, *they ſhould never meet with ſuch another Friend as me*. I ſaid, *Never fear, my Boys, have a good Heart, there are Men of very ſuperior Judgment to me, if they*

they would not think it beneath them to make uſe of it, in the ſame manner I did. They made anſwer, *Their Lives were owing to me, therefore we can juſtly ſay, and have had experimental Proofs of it, that none can exceed you.* So they parted with heavy Hearts, with the words Farewell and Adieu.

I made all the haſte imaginable to *Oſtend*, where we imbarked and made ſail for *Spithead*. There we lay at Anchor ſome Time, and during our Continuance, there were ſeveral Officers went to *Portſmouth* ſeemingly good Friends, for there was no Appearance of any Grudge between them. But though they went together, they did not return together. For one was taken into Cuſtody for depriving the Queen of one of her Subjects. Thus there were two prevented from being of any Service to their Queen or Country. For the Lieutenant deprived the Quarter-maſter of his Life, and the Goal was the Lieutenant's Portion. So far they were divided from having the Pleaſure of going along with us, under the Command of Brigadier *Hill* and Admiral *Walker*, upon the Expedition to *New England*.

Orders were given to make the ſwifteſt Sail imaginable, and accordingly we did, having a fine Gale of Wind. We ſoon got out to Sea, but we had no ſooner got into the Ocean than the Seas began to ſwell prodigiouſly, which occaſioned every one of our Men on board to be Sea-ſick. That created me Employment enough, they not being able to help themſelves. I did

what I could to bring them out of that deplorable Condition, for I got them upon Deck, in order that they might receive the Benefit of the freſh Air. Then I would comb their Heads as a Mother doth her Children's. That was my daily Employment, till ſuch time as they all got well, and my ſo doing kept them from Vermin. I was greatly commended for my Care and Diligence towards them, and by that Means I gained the Love of all the Men, and had them as much at my Beck, as poſſible a Maſter can his Servant. For they obſerved my Motions and gave true Attention to every Thing I ſaid or did, ſo that I taught them to be pretty good Sailors, before we had the Happineſs of reaching *New England.*

We were but ſeven Weeks and odd Days before we arrived, and had fine ſailing which made it an agreeable Paſſage. When we came there we made ſail up the River, and at our Appearance there was a Signal from the Caſtle, and I verily believe they imagined their Enemy was coming upon them, but it proved to be their Friends. For I heard there were all the Precautions imaginable taken for their Defence, thinking it was as I have mentioned, but finding it otherwiſe there were Acclamations of Joy, and Brigadier *Hill* and Admiral *Walker* were conducted by their Troops into the Town, and congratulated upon their ſafe Arrival.

After ſome time there was a Council of War held by the Brigadier and Admiral, and it was agreed on by their judicious Judgment, that all

our

our Forces on board the Fleet ſhould land in order to encamp upon *Rhode* Iſland, which is oppoſite to *Boſton*. Accordingly we did, and I don't think there is a Poſſibility for Mankind to live in Camp more happily than we did, during the time of our Continuance at the ſaid Camp, which was five Weeks. For we had plenty of Proviſion, that refreſhed us and rendered us capable of doing good Execution if it had faln in our Way; likewiſe the Country People would come a great many Miles, in order to ſee their old Countrymen, as they called us, and we were regal'd by them, and entertained moſt plentifully with Wine and Cyder, and every thing that was ſufficient to make us happy. That was a great Help to ſuch a Body of Men, which conſiſted of ſeven Regiments of Foot, *viz.* *Kirk*'s, *Seymour*'s, *Hill*'s, *Diſney*'s, *Windreſs*'s, *Clayton*'s and *Kaine*'s, and accompany'd with a Battalion of Marines, commanded by Colonel *Churchill*. I remember we were all reviewed by General *Hill*, and being drawn up in Form of Battle, we made a beautiful Appearance, and I don't believe the like thereof was ever ſeen in thoſe Parts before; for they all ſeemed Strangers to our Genius, and ſurpriſed at our Dexterity. We were greatly applauded for our Behaviour by all the Officers in general.

Some time after, the *Indian* King came in order to take a View of us, and we all ſhould have liked to have had a full View of him, but to prevent our Curioſity, he had a Vail that covered his Face, and his Secretary was painted

with Reddle, and had a Crow-Quill ſtuck in his Hair bare headed. I thought they made but a very ſhocking Appearance. As ſoon as he paſſed our Regiment, our Orders were to follow him along the Line, and our Officers by way of Compliment went Front and Rear with him. That gave the *Indian* King a great deal of Satisfaction, and the Sight of him pleaſed us much.

During our Continuance at the ſaid Camp I frequently uſed to take a Walk once a Day, but could not ſee any thing worth my Obſervation. Their chief Buildings are of Wood, and in the Iſland there were Houſes erected on purpoſe for the ſick and wounded Men and Women belonging to their Army. I told the People that I greatly approved of that Method, and ſometimes the People would aſk me to take a Walk with them, by way of Recreation. For my part I received a great deal of Civility. Moſt of them took me to their Houſes, and ſeemingly liked my Converſation well. They told me that ſometimes it was very dangerous ſailing with Ships in that Part of the World; as they had great Fogs, and that there had been Inſtances of Ships being loſt at thoſe Times; that generally in the Winter the River between *Boſton* and *Rhode* Iſland is frozen up. That put me in Mind that we ſhould not continue long there.

I remember before we left that Place Major *Allen* was concerned in ſome victualling, for the Preſervation of our Lives, in caſe we ſhould be any ways detained by the Weather. For

Men

Men can't be too careful in thoſe Seas, where they are daily liable to Misfortunes. The Reader will find I know it by Experience; for after our Forces were returned to their reſpective Ships, and all Preparation made for our ſailing, I remember well the Captain of the *Content* came on board our Ship the *Globe*, and went to the Major and told him that he was hard put to it for Hands. I being the firſt that the Queſtion was put to, *whether I was willing to go or not*, anſwered, *with all my Heart*. So I went down for my Arms and Accoutrements, in order to hold myſelf in Readineſs. In the mean time, the Captain went on board another Ship, in order to get two or three more, and in his Abſence there came a Captain of the *Barbadoes* Brigantine on board our Ship, and went to the Major, and told him that Neceſſity obliged him to aſk this Favour, hoping that he would be ſo kind to grant his Requeſt, for he was put to his Shifts for want of Hands to work the Veſſel. Our Major reply'd, that he had none that would be of any Service to him, excepting that Corporal, and he is going on board the *Content*. With that he leaned over the Quarter-Deck, and fixed his Eyes upon me. I was very attentive to what had been ſaid, though ſeemingly took no Notice of it, till I heard a Voice call me by my Name. Upon hearing that, I anſwered, *Sir, your Pleaſure*. He told me, *his Pleaſure was to have me along with him*. I anſwered, *it was equal to me whom I went with*, and, *if you think I can be of any Service, I am*

I am ready to attend you as ſoon as another. With that he deſired I would walk up. I readily went, and he met me with a large Glaſs of Wine in his Hand, which is the only thing in the World to induce a Man to be compliable. After this kind Reception, he told me I might expect a great deal of Civility from him, and he would give me ten Shillings per Week. Now had he ſaid leſs and performed more, it would have been moſt agreeable. But he was one of thoſe that would fly from Juſtice, after his Turn was ſerved. Such Perſons Words ſhould not be looked upon, any more than as a Blaſt of Wind that comes from you know not where. Yet I can't any ways complain of his Civility while I was on Board and in Action. But he did not requite me for my Ingenuity.

After I went on board the *Barbadoes* Brigantine we ſailed along with the Fleet, and when we were out at Sea we employed ourſelves in catching Cods. The Captain being a polite Man ſupplied moſt of the Fleet with Fiſh. I frequently went in a Boat to divert myſelf with Fiſhing, and one Day as we were near the Seaſhore, I ſaw the new *Engliſh* Troops at Exerciſe. I was very deſirous of going to ſee their Method. Accordingly I did, and when I came to them, I found it was very different from ours. After they had gone through their Exerciſe, I deſired to ſhew them ours, and I went through it with as much Life and Vigour as a Man can do, and it pleaſed their Officers to a high Degree, ſo that they treated me with what Wine I could drink,

drink. They told me that there was a Man to be ſhot in the Governor's Iſland, and before we quitted the Country, there were Men appointed to go on Shore, upon the Execution Party. It is not in my Memory what Regiment they belonged to, being blown about with the Wind, which created me Employment enough till we put into *Gaſpe* Bay. Here we waited till ſuch time as the Tranſports and other Ships came up, though we apprehended ſome of them might be blown to Leeward. But after we got all together we proceeded up part of the River of *Canada*, in order to go to *Quebeck*, but we were prevented by Fogs. I could not ſee the leaſt Appearance of a Houſe, nothing but Woods from *Gaſpe* Bay. It is upon the ſame Continent with *New England*.

Our Proceedings were not very ſucceſsful. As we got into a prodigious thick Fog and the Wind began to blow, our whole Fleet began to think themſelves in a very dangerous Situation, having no Sounding nor Sight of Land, to ſteer to any Coaſt. We were in a deplorable Condition, and I remember our Veſſel over-ran the Fleet before we had the Misfortune at the Gulf of St. *Laurence* to loſe our Main-top-maſt; which was the Occaſion of our not being ſo expeditious as we could have wiſhed. But we made all the Sail we could after the Fleet. The Wind continued blowing very hard, and the Seas were very rough, ſo that we over-ran them again; but as good Fortune would have it our Admiral gave us a Signal by the Mouth of a

Cannon, and we concluded it was to lye by, or bring to, therefore we pulled in our Sails, and lowered our Yard, and laid as ſnug as poſſibly we could.

To our thinking we thought ourſelves very ſecure from Danger; but it had like to have proved the reverſe, for we were juſt on the Brink of Deſtruction; it being ſo exceſſively dark, that we could not diſtinguiſh the dangerous nor hazardous Situation we were in, for ſome Time. It was my turn to have the firſt Sleep, after lying by; therefore I went and laid myſelf down, though it was not long before the Watch came upon the Quarter-Deck, and told the Captain that there was a Ship upon the Larboard Bow. I hearing that jumped up in a Moment, and put my Glaſs before my Eyes and could diſcern that it was Rocks. With that I called every Soul up and told them they muſt work for their Lives. I had got them all upon Deck in a ſhort Time, though we were but nine in Number, and went through a great Fatigue the Day before. But when a Man is working for his Life, it is not to be conceived what he can do. The Captain finding what a deplorable Condition we had like to have been in, by heaving the Lead found us to be but three Fathom Water, therefore he commanded us to hoiſt our Fore-yard. I finding that was but of little or no Signification, as we did not ſeem to gain Ground at all, and knowing thoſe were not times to delay, was determined with a full Reſolution to turn Commander

mander myſelf, and if I had not we ſhould have been upon the Breakers in a ſhort Time. I prevented it by the Help of God, though I muſt needs ſay the Captain was very condeſcending to what I propoſed. *Sir*, I ſaid, *I beg for God's Sake you will go to the Helm, and be ſteady, otherwiſe we ſhall all be loſt.* The Sea was prodigious rough, and the Waves broke and diſplayed themſelves over the Veſſel that we expected every Moment to be a Wreck—Now the Captain was ſo diſcreet as to mind what I ſaid, knowing that I was a competent Judge of the working Part. After the Captain was at the Helm, I ſaid to the Men, *Come, my Boys, we have one more Stroke for our Lives, therefore don't let your Courage fail you, but obſerve what I ſay, and hoiſt the Fore-ſtay-ſail.* We did it with all the Expedition imaginable, and I could perceive it would have it's Effect, by it's leaning to Starboard. Then we heaved the Lead, and it was five Fathom Water. That created a little Hope. Then I ſaid, *Gentlemen, you have nothing to do but to mind the Lead.* Then we got another Fathom. *I ſtill was encouraging our Men, by ſaying this will do, if we increaſe every Draught.* Then we heaved it again and we were nine Fathom Water, that animated them all to ſuch a Degree, that it was like fetching the Dead to Life again. The Captain and the Men congratulated each other upon their good Fortune, of having ſuch a Man as me on board. When I found we were ſafe from Danger, I went to the Captain, and ſaid,

Sir,

Sir, ſince you have been ſo good as ſubmit to my Reſolution, it has ſaved your Souls alive. He ſaid, *I own it from my Heart, and I ſhall always acknowledge it was through you only.* I ſaid, *No Sir I aſk pardon, it was through the Providence of God that knows all Men's Hearts; for my own part I am not capable of thinking a good Thought, much more doing a good Action, without the ſupreme Governor of all Things.* I found that the Captain was a Stranger to ſuch Converſation, therefore I refrained talking any longer. As he found we rode ſafe, he gave every Man a Pint of Rum. There was need enough of it, for had we been caſt over-board, we could not have been wetter. Therefore I ſaid, *Noble Captain, this is the time for Refreſhment, after completing ſo great a Work. I little thought that we ſhould ever have been ſaved, but now I am in great Hopes.*

After we had regaled ourſelves, with the beſt the Ship would afford, the Day began to break, and the Clouds diſperſed themſelves, ſo that we could diſtinguiſh our Fleet at a great diſtance, likewiſe we began to look about and we ſaw the Wrecks of ſeveral Tranſports upon the *North* Shore. Thus we found ourſelves in a more dangerous Situation than we imagined, for there were nothing but Rocks and Iſlands, and I was ſurpriſed our whole Fleet was not loſt. Though it was more by the Providence of God, than the good Conduct of the Pilots. Seeing ſeveral in Diſtreſs, we made for them in order to ſee if we could ſave any of their Lives, and when we came near

near them, we found they had gone through a very dismal Operation. But we preserved whom we could alive, though we ran great Hazards in order to get to them. I found the *Content* was lost and all her Crew, that Ship I was appointed to go in. There was likewise the *Smyrna Merchant* with a great many Officers on board her, sixteen Women and four or five Children, and they all shared the same Fate, by the destructive Seas.

As soon as we had done what Service we could, we made the best sail we could after the Fleet; but found they were not sailing from us, and only moved backward and forwards till such time as they got what they could from Shore. I must needs own our Fleet in general shewed a great deal of Humanity, for they stayed two or three Days about that Part, and sent their Boats so long, that there was no Appearance of any living Soul left behind; but a great many dead Bodies floating about, which was a very shocking Sight. Then there was a Consultation held amongst the Officers, and at last they were determined to go to some Bay or Harbour, where they could ride safe, for there was a great Consternation amongst them, fearing they should meet with such like Disaster again, which would not be altogether agreeable after so great a Fatigue. Therefore we made the best sail we could to the *Spanish* River, where we anchored, though it was agreed on by the Officers of the small Vessels to proceed forward up the River, in order that we might water.

water. When we came to a Place fitting for that purpoſe, we went on ſhore and got ſome extremely good Water, and when we had got ſufficient Supply of it we got ſome Wood on board.

The Captain loved to employ us, if he could get any thing for his Advantage, for which he was to be commended. Then I ſaid, *Sir, this will compenſate for our paſt Trouble.* He made no Anſwer to that, only he was very deſirous of taking me with him, wherever he went. He told me that he intended to go on board of a Sloop, and that I ſhould go along with him. Here, in the way of Diſcourſe, he told the Captain of the Sloop, had it not been for me he certainly ſhould have been caſt away. The Captain of the Sloop deſired to know by what Means I preſerved him. Then the Captain deſcribed the Particulars, and by ſo doing created a great deal of Pleaſure between them. Then I was called and they deſired I would ſit down, and drink a Glaſs of Wine with them. I thought that was ſomething very extraordinary, which occaſioned me to ſay, *Gentlemen, is it from a due Regard, or for your own Intereſt, that you grant me this Favour.* That put them to a ſtand, not knowing whom they had to deal with. But I moderated the Thing, by ſaying, *If your Goodneſs would be pleaſed to bequeath to me a Bottle, that I may drink with my Brother Sailors, it will be moſt agreeable to you, and more to my Satisfaction.* With that my Captain ſaid, *If I did not like you for a Companion,*

I ſhould

I ſhould not have brought you along with me. That obliged me to be conformable.

After a long Conference the Captain of the Sloop told me, if I would go along with him he would make my Wages worth ſix Pounds a Month. That was Inducement enough for a Man, that had no Thought for any but himſelf, but all he could ſay, could not prevail upon me to leave my Regiment. I aſked him, *what Part of the World he was going to ſteer for.* He ſaid, *to the* Weſt-Indies. I anſwered, *Sir, was I a Sailor only, I don't know what I could purpoſe better, but as I am engaged in the Land Service, it will be very imprudent for me to think of any ſuch Thing, eſpecially without the Approbation of my Officers. Gentlemen, you certainly take me for a mad Man or a Fool, or you would not aſk me any ſuch Thing. No I ſhall never decline acting juſtly, for the Lucre of Money. For what would all the Money in the World have been to this Man, who was juſt at the Brink of Deſtruction; and I very believe that he would have given all that he had in the World to have brought him out of that hazardous Situation. I am ſurpriſed how a Man can be guilty of any Injuſtice, when he is daily liable to Misfortunes. If they have no Remorſe of Conſcience in them they have not my feeling.* Finding how I was diſpoſed they dropt that Subject. As they were intimate Acquaintance, their View was only to induce me to go along with him, which I did not approve of, but grew very impatient before I had the Pleaſure of going back to our own Veſſel. When I

went on Board of our own Veſſel, I told the Captain, *that he would not get me out of it again, except the Fleet had a Mind to take me on Board them, and that I had no Notion of any Man's perſuading me againſt my own Inclination.* The Captain made Anſwer, *that he did it purely to ſerve me, but begged that I would not take any Notice to any one about it. No, Sir, I will give you my Word upon it, that I ſhall never be guilty of Infamy of any Kind, unleſs there is an abſolute Neceſſity for ſo doing.*

Upon thoſe Words we returned to the Fleet. The Admiral thought proper to call a Council of War, in which it was agreed, both by the Land and Sea Officers, that the Navigation in that Part of the World was very dangerous, and that there was no Dependance for a ſufficient Supply of Proviſion from *New England*, eſpecially at that Time of the Year, and having no more than ten Weeks Proviſion for the Fleet and Army, it was unanimouſly agreed on, to return to *Old England* again, without making any further Attempts: So ended our Expedition to *Quebeck:* Though had we not had extremely bad Weather, and inſuperable Difficulties attending us daily, there was ſome Likelihood of our accompliſhing our Deſign. For we were under the Conduct of ſo experienced Officers, that it would have been morally impoſſible for the Enemy to have prevented the Succeſs of that Enterprize. Therefore I would not have the World think there was any Neglect of any Kind. So far from that, it was attend-

tended with all the Care imaginable; nay, all the Art of Men could not deviſe a more promiſing Scheme: For there was not one Officer but what was capable of performing every Thing he undertook. So their not having Succeſs ought not in the leaſt to ſtain their Character; nor no one in Juſtice can ſay there was any ill Conduct from our firſt ſetting out to the Day we returned from the *Spaniſh* River.

From thence General *Hill* ſent forward Colonel *Clayton* with an Expreſs to Court, and we made Sail after him in a ſhort Time, and had an extremely good Paſſage to *Portſmouth*, and were almoſt got to *Poſt Bridge* when the *Edgar* Man of War was blown up, which was a very unfortunate Thing, after wading through thoſe hazardous Seas that we had juſt arrived from.

So far I have inſerted all I know of that Expedition; though I was not in the leaſt recompenſed for the Trouble and Care I had been at. It was the Captain's voluntary Offer to give me ten Shillings per Week, but I found the Captain had more Want for Money than me; therefore my Nature would not let me inſiſt upon having my Right, but I relinquiſhed it as voluntarily as he offered it, without importuning once for it. Only when I took my Leave of the Captain, I deſired *he would remember the Rocks never to go near them again.* He made Anſwer, *I may thank you for your Reſolution, or I ſhould never have been able to have gone there, or any where elſe.* That was ſome Kind of Acknowledgment,

ledgment, and it pleaſed me as well as if he had given me my Dividend; though three or four Pounds was Money to a Man that wanted it. But if Money could make a Man happy, I had what I could wiſh for. But at that Time I muſt be like the polite Part of the World, or young Men that give Way to Extravagance; though now I find the Effects of the Gayety of my Youth.

When we left *Portſmouth* we marched down for *Shrewſbury*, the Place appointed for our Winter Quarters. On the Road we were all as jovial as it was poſſible Men could be, and I was as well attended by all the Tapſters and Drawers upon the Road, as a private Gentleman can poſſibly be upon a Journey. I would have the Reader think that nothing will induce them to attend but a good Benefactor, and that was not wanting wherever I went. I had not been at *Shrewſbury* above a Week, before the People in general ſhewed me as much Reverence as any Officer belonging to the Regiment; and they did not decline their awful Reſpect ſo long as we continued there, which was till Spring. So I make my Concluſion for this Year, and will proceed to all I know of the next.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXVII.

The Author's Desire to be employed again: His Account of the Behaviour of his present Majesty in the late War in Flanders: *Embarks for* Dunkirk: *Mutiny there: The Author returns to* England, *and is discharged.*

IN 1712, we left *Shrewsbury*, and returned to *Portsmouth*, where we stayed so long, that I was almost tired of my Situation, not knowing how to employ my idle Hours better than to draw up the Scene of War in my Mind, which I was daily thinking on, and endeavouring to draw Advantage from a serious and attentive Reflection on my past Transactions. Had the War continued a little longer, this would have enabled me to have turned out a complete Warrior, which was all I wished for. For it would have been a Means to give me an Opportunity to make up what I found myself deficient in, and it will at this Time animate my Soul if I may be accepted on to face the *French* once more. I appeal to the World whether I am not worthy of that Honour. Let the profound experienced Man judiciously make Trial, according to his Will and Pleasure; for I am willing to submit, let it be in the lowest Sphere of all, and would gladly spend the rest of my Fortune to be of Service to his most excellent Majesty, knowing all that a Subject is capable of performing is due to him; and I wish I was

able to find Terms ſufficient to repreſent to the World in a true Light his youthful Performance.

For Inſtance, at the Battle of *Oudenard*, his Majeſty behaved incomparably well: I remember him at the Head of a Squadron of his Father's Forces, when the *French* Houſhold Troops were bearing down upon him, with ſuch Courage and Conduct, as were ſurpriſing in ſo young a Prince. His Royal Perſon was expoſed to as much Danger as a common Soldier. There needs no rhetorical Ornament, but an exact Narration of Facts to explain his Conduct: Therefore I think there is a Duty incumbent upon all his Subjects to do to the utmoſt of their Ability to ſerve him; for my Part I ſhall always be ready at the Word of Command; but in the mean Time I'll make an End of all my Performances.

In the Queen's Reign, when we left *Portſmouth*, we made the beſt of our Way to *Graveſend*, in order to embark for *Dunkirk*. I remember before our Embarkation, there was a great deal of Contention amongſt thoſe Regiments that went upon the Deſcent for *Canada* along with us. I was very deſirous of knowing their Grievances, and ſoon informed myſelf, that their Diſputes aroſe from being deprived of their Pay, during the Time of their Continuance on Ship-Board. But as for our Regiment it did not diſcompoſe them, for our Officers promiſed all the Men in general to pay them at their Arrival at *Dunkirk*; and farther, that it

was

was better for them than being at the Trouble of exchanging *Engliſh* Money into *French*. That prevented Strife that might have happened amongſt us, and I thought it very prudently judged of the Officers: For the greateſt Part of the private Men would have expended it in Luxury, which would have hurt their Conſtitutions, and emptied their Pockets before a Time of Need. It is often the Caſe amongſt thoſe mutinous Perſons; for there is no Regularity obſerved by them. So far from that, they will indulge themſelves with Superfluities one Day, if they ſtarve the reſt of the Week; and when they have embezzled all, pilfer from the reſt; and the Conſequence of that often is, being tied up to the Halbert, which is not altogether agreeable to their Backs; and yet there are a great Number who will ſuffer that, before they will be conformable.

Then we ſailed to take Poſſeſſion of that large important Place *Dunkirk*, and at our Arrival we ſailed by the Peer, where the Walls were adorned with a great Number of People, who ſhewed us ſome Reſpect. Our Forces landed and lay along the Beech, till ſuch Time as our Officers had drawn for Quarters. When they had ſo done, our Guards went off in order to relieve the *French* out of the Forts, which were adorned with *French* Colours flying. At our Appearance they ſtruck, and *Engliſh* were hoiſted, and the Regiment that I belonged to took Poſſeſſion of the Citadel, which was our appointed Quarters, and we did Duty in it as our

own. At that Juncture of Time there were *French* that lay in the Baſtion where I did Duty, in order to guard ſome Men of War they had taken from us, and ſeveral other Ships and Galleys. They all did Duty in due Order, for I remember the Slaves were chained in the Galleys every Night. I could perceive there were ſome Marks of Diſtinction between them, that they did not endure the Burthen of Links as the poor Slaves did, but were light and eaſy to their Legs; and another Thing I took Notice of, they had pretty little Huts erected for them; and moſt of them were very induſtrious in ſelling one Thing or other by Way of turning the Peny to a good Uſe. In the firſt Place they would make a Kind of Tea. For my Part, I uſed often to reſort there, and drink it in a Morning frequently for Breakfaſt; and what Money I could well ſpare they partook of; for I love to encourage Induſtry, and there was a great deal of that amongſt thoſe poor Souls. My Heart ached for their Slavery.

When my Lord *Bolingbrook* came to *Dunkirk*, he received a favourable Reception from the Magiſtrates. There was a Galley, that lay in the Baſon, fitted and manned, in order to divert his Lordſhip; and the Ships had their Colours flying; the Artillery fired, and in a ſhort Time the Slaves were commanded to row the Galley with all her Formalities, and it was performed in a beautiful Manner. This was the Method they took in order to divert my Lord before he returned to *England*. Sometimes

times I was invited on Board the Galley, in order to drink a Bottle of Wine, or Part of a Bowl of Punch, and we had a fine Concert of Muſick in the great Cabin. This was the Manner I ſpent my idle Hours, being like a Fiſh out of Water, without Employment of ſome Kind or other. Tnerefore by Way of Recreation, I took ſeveral of our Men aſide, in order to give them the true Spirit in exerciſing. This was a great Taſk. After I had ſhewed them a Precedent, they could ſee their Deficiencies, and were very deſirous of learning. And before I was tired of that Employment, the whole Regiment was well verſed in that Art. In a ſhort Time therefore the Officers could perceive my Dexterity, and I was taken from doing Duty, being only deſired to look over the Men ſometimes, and ſee if there was nothing wanting. I would have the Reader think that I thought it a great Favour, and it was thought by ſeveral that I ſhould have been made an Adjutant in a ſhort Time, if the War had continued a little longer. But I was diſappointed.

One Thing occaſioned a great deal of Contention, though it was intended for our own Good. After the Duke of *Ormonde* had diſperſed his whole Army, and ſeparated the *Dutch* Troops from ours, he gave Orders that they might go to their reſpective Gariſons. When his Grace had ſo done, he returned to *Dunkirk*, and there were great Rejoicings at his Arrival, which pleaſed him much. Yet there was no Appearance of thoſe warlike Deeds in his Face, that

there was in that of the brave Duke of *Marlborough*. However he was applauded for his Generosity in augmenting the Soldiers Pay. He ordered every Sergeant to have Ten-pence, every Corporal Six-pence, and every private Sentinel Four-pence *per* Week Entry; and his positive Orders were, that it might be paid once in two Months, in order to buy them Necessaries in such a Space of Time. This was meant intirely for their Good; but through the Neglect or Instigation of some People, it manifestly appeared to the Eyes of those that would see, that the Consequence would be very bad, if it was not performed according to the Duke's Command. For our Soldiers in those Days were Men of Resolution, and never suffered Imposition of any Kind; but would strenuously exert themselves for their Right. For my Part, I could not discommend them for it, but yet I would not associate with them, but endeavoured to restrain them from the Thoughts of Mutiny or Riots of any Kind. For Example, when two Months were expired, all the Men in general importuned for their extraordinary Allowance, though they did not succeed in the first, nor second, nor third Application. They still were kept in Suspense, till they grew very impatient, and thought there was no Likelihood of ever being paid. Then some came to advise with me about it, and others would say, that they were determined to get it by some Means or other. Therefore said I, *Gentlemen, let Patience be your Guide, and receive my Advice before*

fore

fore you proceed any further. In the first Place, if our Officers have not Honour enough in them to think it is our just Due, I think it is below our Profession to keep dunning them for it. And farther, if they endeavour to decline what supports Honour, I would look upon them to be no better than myself, though, at the same Time, we are obliged to submit to them. This is the Key that I would recommend to you, for your own Satisfaction and Comfort. In that Manner I conversed with them daily; and I believe it had a little Influence over some, who hearkened to my Discourse; but those that would not, were very strenuous in their Importunities: For I remember, on a *Sunday*, as I was walking by the Barracks, I saw a Body of Men assembled together, and found their Conversation was about their odd Groats. Therefore I thought it would be prudent in me to go and consult with them. So I observed in this Manner, *Gentlemen, have you no Regard for the Day? Why will you be the Cause of Contention?* They answered me, *They would go and fetch a Regiment out of the Citadel, in order to join them.* I thought it in vain to contend with Men of such Resolutions, therefore I retired and returned to our Regiment, desiring they would not be concerned in the Affair, except they had a Mind to be taken up as Mutineers. I prevailed upon some, but it is with Soldiers as it is with every Thing else; there is no Senate without an Opposition, nor no Party of Men without different Opinions. Therefore some said they would endea-

vour to maintain their own Rights, and nothing ſhould obſtruct them. So they went and joined with the others, and in about an Hour after, there was a Body of 1600 Men walking along the Streets, and before the Governor's Houſe. The Governor was very deſirous of knowing what it meant. They ſoon informed him, and he deſired that every Man would go to his reſpective Quarters, and he would take Care they ſhould be paid. They all retired with a great deal of Satisfaction, and were paid very ſhortly.

At that Juncture of Time there was a great Diſturbance at *Ghent* amongſt the Soldiers, which occaſioned ſome to ſuffer Death. On hearing that News, I could not contain myſelf any longer without obſerving to the firſt Officer I met with, *Sir, with Submiſſion, what can be the Meaning that all our Gariſons are diſturbed in this Manner? It is an Inſtance that never happened during the Time of the Duke of* Marlborough. *But now Strife is come to ſuch a Head that it is intolerable, and there is no reſiſting againſt a popular Tumult, without running into inſuperable Dangers.* The Officer replied, *There is no accounting for it; it is unintelligible to me, why there ſhould be this Contention.* Therefore he left me to think of it as I pleaſed; ſo I could not help making this Reflection, that it proceeded as much from the ill Conduct of the Officers, as the Imprudence of the Men. Likewiſe I could not help thinking, that we were very fortunate to have a general Suſpenſion of Arms; for had ſuch like Diſaſters happened

pened when we were at War, it would have given the *French* a brave Opportunity to exert themſelves, and rendered them capable to have prevented all our Deſigns. O the Duke of *Marlborough* that gained the Love of all Men, knew better, than to put it in any one's Power to upbraid him; for all his Men in general were obſequious. Now they are become refractory, and neglect their Duty. There were two Men condemned by a Court-Marſhal in *Dunkirk*, and they both went to the Place of Execution; but the Duke of *Ormonde*, hearing that one of the two never heard the Articles of War, and being a Recruit, acquitted him, and the other was ſhot. So far he ſhewed a ſmall Glimpſe of Humanity, though not being acquainted with any more of his Perfections while in that Capacity, I will leave it to others to explain his Excellencies, which I am not appriſed of. I muſt needs own after our Men received their Dividend, and that unlucky Accident was over, all the Men in general were very affable and agreeable during the Time of our Continuance at *Dunkirk*.

In 1713 our Regiment was commanded to *England*, therefore I was under ſome Apprehenſions, that it was not an effectual Peace, which occaſioned me to be very unwilling to leave that Part of the World. But having a Wife in *England* it was a great Inducement, otherwiſe I ſhould have returned to my old Regiment, having a great Deſire to ſee every Thing to an End. Yet I was inwardly grieved, knowing

knowing that at that Time we might have clenched a Nail in ſuch a manner, that it would have cured the *French* of ever triumphing over us again. I was like a Fiſh that is eager to catch at the Bait, but finding it of no Subſtance declined it and returned to *England*, and landed at *Dover*, and ſtayed till General *Evans* came and broke our Regiment, which induced me to compoſe theſe following Lines,

God and a Soldier Men alike adore,
When at the Brink of Danger, not before;
The Danger paſt, alike are both requited,
God is forgot, and the brave Soldier ſlighted.
Learning and Arts, we find the older grown,
The more are reverenced, gain more Renown;
Why then are Soldiers ſlighted that have gain'd
Conqueſt in Fields, and Honours have obtain'd?
Becauſe grown old, muſt Valour be neglected,
And all paſt Services be quite rejected?
Encouragement makes young, and 'twill appear,
In midſt of Dangers we're too old to fear.

CHAP. XXVIII.

The Author finds his Wife married to another Huſband: Her ſudden Death and Epitaph:

AFTER our general Diſcharge at *Dover*, I parted with my Companions, and made all the haſte imaginable to a Place called *Harriſon* in *Kent*, in order to ſee my Uncle before I went to ſee my Wife, whom I expected

to

to have found in *Oxfordſhire*. But I was diſappointed. As ſoon as I appeared before my Uncle, he ſaid, *Nephew, I am overjoyed to ſee you, but am ſorry Things are as they are. In the firſt place, I am ſorry you have been ſo negligent as to neglect ſending to your Wife theſe three or four Years. I am afraid it will be an Inſtrument of one or both your Deſtructions.* I grew very impatient to know what he meant, but he kept me in Suſpence for a conſiderable Time, though I was continally importuning to know. He ſometimes ſaid he was afraid to reveal it to me. At that Reply, I ſaid, *Dear Sir, I hope you will not conceal any thing that may be deſtructive to me or my Wife.* He made anſwer, *that he did not intend to conceal it, neither could he; but ſhould be glad if he could make up the Difference that ſubſiſted between us.* That put me in ſo great an Agony, that I was not able to contain myſelf. He perceived how I was tormented in my Mind, therefore ſaid, *I would not have you to grieve nor perplex yourſelf; but if you will promiſe me to impute it to your own Neglect, I will tell you.* I ſaid, *without all doubt I ſhall if it is ſo. Well,* ſaid he, *don't you remember that you have been abſent from your Wife almoſt ſix Years, and ſhe has received but three Letters from you. Now that Neglect, and the Inſtigation of ſome People has induced her to marry another Huſband. It was entirely without my Conſent, for I certified to them that you was alive and well. But I found nothing would reſtrain her Friends from thinking otherwiſe,*

wife, and they produced two Soldiers, one said that he helped to put you into the Ground, and the other stood by. They made Affidavit of this, and that you was buried upon St. Peter's *Hill in* Ghent. *By that Means they prevailed upon your Dear Wife to marry a Man, by whom she has conceived! O Sir, O Sir, my Burthen is more than I can bear: What must I do to lighten it? Cousin,* replied he, *there should nothing but Patience be admitted, in such Cases as those. Had she continued with your Mother this Thing might not have happened; her coming to see her Grandfather a little before he died, was a designed Thing, that he might leave what he had to one who has deprived you of some Thousands; for he has all the Gaiety that a young Man can have. He has kept his Hounds and his Hunters since the old Man died, which has been the occasion of his expending some of the Principal. Sir, pardon me, did you acquaint the old Man that I was alive? Sir, as I told you before, I was against it and did what lay in my Power to prevent it's taking Effect; but they did not regard my Remonstrances, and credited the false Report of your Death, and persisted it was so. I could do no more if it had been for my own Child! Well, Sir, I have another Favour to ask of you; had she any Child by me?* He replied, *a pretty Boy, but the Child has been taken off of his Legs these twelve Months, but she is prodigiously fond of it, and says that it is the Picture of his Father, and that she would endeavour to raise it for his Sake. Sir,* said I, *that denotes Love which shocks my Soul, and I*

find

find that it was through the Inſtigation of that diabolical Spirit, that ſhe was induced to marry this Man. Yet I own myſelf in a Fault, for not writing; but as ſhe knew my Reſolution and my whole Intention, ſhe might have had Patience and defer'd it till the War had been over. But yet, I don't impute it to her own Nature, but the Nature of that deviliſh Spirit who prevailed upon Eve. It is plain my Wife has condeſcended to his Perſuaſions, at the ſame time inſenſible of the Effects of him. But Sir, I am impatient to ſee her; therefore I beg you will favour me with your Company, for to Morrow Morning I am determined to go and claim her as my own, and if I ſhould meet with any Reſiſtance from the Gentleman, I'll change my Glove with him, in order to find out his Qualifications; and I don't doubt but this ſucceſsful Arm will give the fatal Blow. Dear Couſin, ſaid he, *don't be ſo raſh, but do Things diſcreetly. Conſider that ſhe is big with Child, and that it will be an Act of Imprudence to put her in a Surpriſe. There have been Inſtances of Things of that kind being prodigious hurtful, eſpecially if ſhe had a Veneration for you. Therefore be adviſed by me to take this Method.* 'I intend to accompany you to *Cha-*
'*tham*, but I would adviſe you to ſeem an intire
'Stranger, and not forward of coming into the
'Houſe, till ſuch time as I call you in; and take
'this Wig and put over your Hair, by way of
'a Diſguiſe; and when I am with her I ſhall
'only ſignify to her that there is a Man at the
'Door, that knew her Huſband full well; and

'is

'is extremely ſorry to hear of his Death, and 'aſk if ſhe has a Mind to talk to you about him. 'But when you enter the Houſe, take no more 'Notice than if you had never ſeen her. I 'don't doubt but what you'll ſoon find, if ſhe 'has any Idea of your Perſon.' *Sir, I greatly approve of your Method, and ſhall always take all the Care imaginable to perfect what you have obſerved.*

So it was unanimouſly agreed on to go in the Morning. But the Reader will find, after my Uncle and I had taken all the Care imaginable to prevent any Suſpicion of me, it had but little Effect, for the Moment I entered her Houſe I could perceive her Countenance change, and I had not ſpoke above three Words, before ſhe ſaid, *it is my Huſband*, and ſwooned away. Now the pretended Huſband imagined it was he ſhe ſpoke of. But he found it the reverſe; for as ſoon as ſhe revived a little, ſhe ſhewed he was her utter Averſion; nay ſhe could not endure him in her Sight. Nor could I endure the Houſe, or ſee what Agonies ſhe was in, which demonſtrated her Sincerity. Now the perfidious Perſon could not tell the Meaning of it, till I came in about an Hour after and revealed it to him. Upon that, he fell into a violent Rage, and called me a Scoundrel. That obliged me to ſpeak. *Sir*, ſaid I, *If you are a Gentleman don't behave with ſuch Imprudence, conſider my Wife is big with Child by you, and I am afraid ſhe is dangerouſly ill.* He ſtill perſiſted with his Abuſes, while I was as cool as a Lamb. And

only ſaid, *Are you not aſhamed of your ſcurrilous Language to a Man of my Trade; do you think to bully me? No, it is not Words that I mind from ſuch a Man as you. Farther, I beg you will ceaſe your Noiſe or I ſhall inſiſt upon it.* My Uncle begged for God's Sake he would have Patience; that my Wife was extremely ill and uncapable of giving a rational anſwer, therefore I ſent for an Apothecary, and when he came he told us, that ſhe would certainly miſcarry, and that it was ten to one if ſhe did not loſe her Life. That ſhocked my very Soul, ſo that I was not able to contain myſelf. My Uncle ſent for a Midwife, and ſhe had all the Attendance imaginable, but nothing would do as the Jaws of Death had taken Hold of her, for ſhe continued in that deplorable Condition three Days, and then expired. But from the Hour that it happened, to half an Hour before ſhe gave up the Ghoſt, her Senſes were almoſt loſt. Yet juſt before her Glaſs was run, ſhe ſaid, *my Dear, forgive me and all is well.* Then ſhe cloſed up her Eyes, and went off like a Lamb.

I could not help bewailing my unhappy Fate, and wiſhing I had never been born; as I was the Occaſion of her Death. How can I account for this, though there was no Ill meant by me? as I heartily took the Advice of my Uncle, it can't be ſaid, that I was acceſſary to her Death. Therefore I thought it would be prudent to obſerve to the pretended Huſband in this manner: *Sir, can't you perceive that my Diſappointment is greater than yours; if you can't, I will explain*

explain it to you. 'I am deprived of all that is 'dear to me in the World, and you are only 'disappointed of an Infant, that is concealed 'in her Womb, which I am heartily sorry 'she did not discharge before Death seized 'her.' In answer to that he replied, *You notorious Villian, what harm has my Offspring done her. Sir*, replied I in plain Terms, *it has been the Occasion of her Death, and I will suffer myself to share the same Fate, before I will receive any more of your Abuses.* With that he retired like one confused, without making me an Answer, and I could never get into his Company to converse with him after that: Therefore I was obliged to get my Uncle to concert with him about his Affairs; but finding every thing was settled in such a manner, that I could not partake, unless the old Man had been living, I told my Uncle, 'I could not endure the Town 'any longer, after my Wife was put into the 'Earth. Besides the People will observe as I 'walk along the Streets, *look do you see how the 'dead Man walks*; this will add to my Grief, 'and render me uncapable of any Thing, but 'to bemoan my unhappy Fate. Therefore I 'must flee elsewhere for Refuge, to my own 'Country where they are not acquainted with 'what has befaln me. The Thing repeated, 'still renews my Pain.' So after her Burial I made all the Preparations I could in order to go to the Place of my Nativity, and ever after I declined mentioning this to any one, till now that I reveal it to the World. Though I left

theſe following Lines behind me, as an Epitaph. Then I took my little Boy, and made the beſt of my way to *Deddington* in *Oxfordſhire*, and my Uncle parted from me with the Word Adieu.

EPITAPH.

Unhappy Woman by Relations led,
Thou innocently didſt corrupt my Bed.
Theirs was the Crime, to them ſhall be my Hate,
While I lament with Tears thy wretched Fate.
Thy precious Life did for thy Fault atone,
But leaves in Sorrow me your Loſs to moan.

When I arrived at the Place of my Nativity, the Thoughts of being deprived of my Wife, my intended Comfort, rendered me unfit to think of a Settlement; nay I was uncapable of enjoying one Night's Reſt, and nothing that could be propoſed could ſatisfy me; but I was daily lamenting my wretched Caſe, blaming myſelf for returning to *England*. I wiſhed there might have been a perpetual War, to have retained me from ever ſeeing the Face of this Iſle again. But one Day as I was walking in a diſconſolate manner ſeveral Reflections occurred to me, which were as follow: 'Why ſhould I bewail myſelf for what I cannot retrieve; or why ſhould I wiſh to be abroad when there is nothing in Agitation, knowing that my Nature is ſtrenuouſly inclined never to be eaſy any longer than I am in Action?' This induced me to compoſe the following Lines, which were a

kind of Recreation as well as Amuſement, and a Means to drive away the Thoughts of my Wife. But I ſhall only give the World an Abſtract of them, hoping it will not diſcompoſe the Reader.

In the firſt place, I will bring down the imaginary Soldier to the Rank of Indignity, knowing they are unworthy of what they imagine they are. For Example, Soldiers of late Years have been like unto Children, whom their Maſters have prevailed upon to learn the Horn Book. As the Child imagined when he had learned the Criſs-Croſs-Row, that he was a complete Scholar; ſo the Soldier fancies when he has learnt his Exerciſe, that he is in the Rank of brave Soldiers, and will ſwagger about as ſuch. But to convince them, comparatively ſpeaking, they moſt reſemble a Child that has juſt learned the Criſs-Croſs-Row, and are not ſenſible of their Ignorance till they arrive to the Honour of going upon Service, (they ſhewed us a Specimen of it, at the Battle of *Dettingen*).

But next I ſhall ſhew the World, as far as my Capacity will allow me, the true Character of an honourable Soldier; knowing their Function to be worthy of more than I can expreſs. And I hope it will be of uſe to the Commonalty of Mankind, more eſpecially at this critical Juncture. Firſt, God is pleaſed to carry the Name of a Soldier, God is a Man of War, ſaith *Moſes*, *Exodus* xv. 3. and the Son of God profeſſed himſelf to be a Captain of the Lord's Hoſt, *Joſhua* iii. 14, 15. Secondly, the moſt renown-

ed

ed in Holy Writ, and human Stories, have attained to great Fame by their valiant Acts and Feats of Arms, as we may see in *Joshua*, *Gideon*, *Ehud*, *Barak*, *Sampson*, *David* and his Warriors. What Speeches are made of the nine Worthies, of *Joshua*, *David*, *Judas Maccabæus*, for their Valour and Victory in Battle? By Fame the Memory of *Julius Cæsar*, *Alexander* the *Great*, *Pyrrhus*, *Themistocles*, *Scipio*, *Hannibal*, *Scanderbeg* and *Charles* the fifth, remains immortal, and innumerable others both in prophane and divine Story. Thirdly, whence came all these greatly affected Titles now in the World? Rose they not from Valour, Prowess, military Employments, and Exercise of Arms? Whence came Esquires but by being Armigers or Armor-bearers? Whence came the Knights of old, not by scraping of Wealth and buying of Titles, but by being Soldiers? Whence came Noblemen, Earls, Dukes? Nay the highest Rank of Dignity, an Emperor; but from Honour bestowed upon him in the Field by Reason he knew how to command a Host of Men? Fourthly, *Solomon*, the wisest of Kings that ever was, held such as were Men of War to be more honourable than to employ them in servile Work. Such as he employed in that Service were Strangers, 2 *Chron.* ix. and the People of *Canaan*, the *Hittites*, *Amorites*, *Perizites*, *Hivites* and *Jebusites*; and farther I shall give the Reader Quotations from the Scripture Records, by way of convincing part of the World that War upon a just Cause is undoubtedly law-

ful, though it may be contrary to the Opinion of ſome; and I was induced to tranſcribe theſe following Lines, knowing that there is nothing can give a greater Encouragement in Action, than to have Conſcience ſatisfied in the Lawfulneſs thereof. In the firſt Place, I hope all the World may be of this Opinion, that God never admitted of a Title of a Thing unlawfully, *Exodus* xv. 'Therefore I will ſing unto the Lord, for he has triumphed glorioufly; the Horſe and his Rider hath he thrown into the Sea. The Lord is my Strength and Song, and he is become my Salvation; he is my God and I will prepare him an Habitation, my Father's God and I will exalt him. The Lord is a Man of War, the Lord is his Name. Thy right Hand, O Lord, hath daſhed in Pieces the Enemy. Thou in thy Mercy haſt led forth the People which thou haſt redeemed, thou haſt guided them in thy Strength unto thy Holy Habitation. The People ſhall hear and be afraid, Sorrow ſhall take hold on the Inhabitants of *Paleſtine*. The Duke of *Edom* ſhall be amazed and mighty Men tremble, the Lord ſhall reign for ever, and ever.' Secondly, he has given Commands to his People to fight, he made Laws for Directions to them when they went to War. God ſent his Spirit upon them, to encourage them; as in *Gideon*, *Sampſon*, *&c.* You may read it in the Book of *Judges*, and in 1 *Sam.* v. 2, 24. *Numbers* xxxi. 3. God raiſed up ſome Prophets to comfort and ſet forward his People to war, *Moſes* ſpeaks unto the People, 'Arm ſome of yourſelves unto the War, and

let them go againſt the *Midianites* and avenge the Lord in *Midian*.' The Children of *Iſrael* came to *Deborah* the Propheteſs for Judgment, and ſhe ſent and called *Barack* and ſaid unto him, 'Hath not the Lord God of *Iſrael* commanded ſaying; go and draw towards Mount *Taber*, and take with thee ten thouſand Men.' 2 *Chron.* xx. 14. 'Then upon *Jahaziel* came the Spirit of the Lord in the midſt of the Congregation, and he ſaid, Hearken ye all *Judah*, and ye Inhabitants of *Jeruſalem*, and thou King *Jehoſhaphat*, Thus ſaith the Lord unto you, be not afraid nor diſmay'd by reaſon of this great Multitude, for the Battle is not yours, but God's. Ye ſhall not need to fight in this Battle, ſtand ye ſtill and ſee the Salvation of the Lord with you; fear not, for the Lord will be with you.' So far I have given the Reader a Specimen of the old Teſtament. Now I will proceed forward and explain the Opinion of the New, where the Reader will ſay that it is otherwiſe, for his infinite Majeſty is in it but once or twice called the Lord of Hoſt, *James* v. 4. more often the God of Peace. It is true that all Men ſhould ſeek Peace, and purſue after it as a Bleſſing of God; yet juſt and neceſſary War is not to be condemned. St. *Ambroſe* ſaith it is part of Juſtice by War to defend our Country and Confederates, and ſuch as need Aid from Spoilers and Oppreſſors, neither doth the new Teſtament diſallow of it, *Matth.* xxiv. 'For Nations ſhall riſe againſt Nations, and Kingdoms againſt Kingdoms, and ye ſhall hear of

Wars and Rumors of Wars, ſee that ye be not troubled for all theſe Things will come to paſs.' So it tranſparently appears that War was not diſallowed of, ſo it be juſt. Our Prince of Peace tells us of War, *Rev.* xix. and is pleaſed to be ſet out ' as Captain of an Hoſt riding on Horſe-back, and he was called Faithful and True, and in Righteouſneſs he doth judge and make War, and his Army followed him upon white Horſes and ſubduing his Enemies.' This ſheweth that his Church ſhall have Wars, and he will take their Parts. *Cornelius* was a Captain and Soldier, that feared God and waited on him, *Acts* x. and the Lord, in calling the Gentiles to the Goſpel, made choice to begin with Calling him. With a good Conſcience then, we may take up Arms when there is no Safety but in Arms. We muſt know God taketh not away the Law of Nature, to defend ourſelves by forcible Means againſt violent Enemies: God hath now appointed Kings to uſe the Sword. Baſe People were not worthy to be Men of War, their Function was not honourable enough to be enrolled among the honourable Men worthy of the Name of a Soldier if the worth of a true Soldier were well weighed. Where God conducts the Generals of an Army and inſpirits the Soldiers, they march with Glory and carry Terror wherever they go. ' Wiſ-' dom and Strength are his,' *Job* xii. 13. ' The Battle is not always to the Strong, *Eccl.* ix. 11. God taught *David* to play the part of a valiant Captain and Soldier, he made his Hands to war and his Fingers to fight, and made his

Arm ſtrong: Therefore he ſaid, 'Thou haſt girded me with thy Strength unto the Battle, and have ſubdued thoſe that roſe up againſt me,' for which *David* rendered Thanks to him, *Pſal.*xviii. 39. Now I would have the Reader give true Attention to what this valiant King ſaid, 'The Lord is my Fortreſs and Deliverer, my Strength and Buckler, my high Tower and Salvation, ver. 2. and further he gratefully acknowledges, that the great God was the Cauſe of all that Courage and Strength that he had, likewiſe that his ineſtimable Goodneſs was the Giver of all Victories which attended his Army. *David* from a Shepherd came to be a King over *Iſrael*; *Jeptha*, though of baſe Birth, yet by his Valour became a Judge in *Iſrael*; *Iſocrates*, the *Athenian*, who was Lieutenant to *Artaxerxes*, was a Cobler's Son; *Eumenes*, one of *Alexander*'s Captains, was a Carter's Son; *Servius Tullius*, who triumphed three times, was no better than the Son of a poor Servant; *Diocleſian*, though a bloody Perſecutor of the Chriſtians, yet a valiant Man, obtained the Empire by hisProweſs and Valour, and was but a Scrivener's Son; *Nicholas Pichinnion*, the great Commander of the Armies of the Potentates in *Italy*, was but a Butcher's Son; the moſt famous Nation in the World, the *Romans*, who ſubdued Kingdoms, never held any Profeſſion worthy of ſo great Honour, nor ever rewarded any ſo much as they did valiant Men, generous Spirits adventuring their Lives, and obtaining thereby Praiſe to themſelves and Glory to their Nation, as their Hiſtories do ſhew, and make

mention

mention of more than I am able to relate. Therefore certainly this Calling muſt be very honourable, which requires ſo many Endowments requiſite to make a Man deſerving to be admitted into the military Profeſſion, and crowning all with true Religion and Zeal towards God, with a loyal and faithful Heart to our King and Country. What Profeſſion procured more Honour to Nations than Men of War have done? *Greece* by her *Achilles*, *Epirus*, that little Country, by her peerleſs *Pyrrhus*, and that Terror to the *Turk*, *Scanderberg*, *Macedonia* by her great *Alexander*, *Troy* by her valiant *Hector*, *Rome* by *Cæſar*, *Pompey*, *Scipio*, and the reſt, *Lacedæmon* by *Cimon* and *Leonidas*, *Carthage* by her *Hannibal*, and others. In a Word, who is more honourably eſteemed in the Hearts of all virtuous Men, than a Soldier, ſo he be duly qualified, and do not wrong himſelf by ſome baſe Action, which true Generoſity of Spirit will utterly diſdain to do? *Ehud*'s Soldiers were Volunteers at the Sound of a Trumpet, *Judges* iii. 27. ſo were the Sons of *Jeſſe*, and ſuch were *David*'s Worthies, 1 *Sam.* i. 17. *Deborah* the Propheteſs praiſes the Volunteers who came to help *Barak*, but complaineth of ſuch as followed their private Buſineſs and neglected the Wars, and curſed *Meroz* for not coming to help the Lord, *Judges* v. 12, 15, 23. *Moſes* was King in *Iſrael*, and commanded to chuſe out of every Tribe one Thouſand, to make an Hoſt of twelve Thouſand to go againſt *Midian*; ſo did *Saul* and *David*,

David, 1 *Sam.* xxi. 2 *Sam.* xxii. Without Command Princes could not have waged Battle as they then did. Thus a lawful Calling may be as well undertaken freely as by Compulsion, and since it is so honourable and lawful withal, there must needs be a great Delight to be of that Calling where so many honourable Princes, Dukes, Earls, Lords, Knights, Esqrs. and Gentlemen are in Defence of Religion, their King and Country, and for relieving the oppressed and maintaining their Rights. It is part of Justice by War to defend our Country and Confederates, and such as need Aid from Spoilers and Oppressors; not only for Princes to punish Offenders, but also to defend their Subjects from Wrongs at home and abroad. And what hindereth Princes from recovering what is justly their own, if otherwise not to be gotten, by Force of Arms, as all see the Undertakings of War to be lawful and honourable? But it must always be understood whether the Cause be just; for as the Cause is either Good or Evil, such may the Issue be hereafter expected to be. Yet true it is that unjust Wars may have good Success, for the Iniquity of the People against whom they are undertaken. A just War is in the Defence of our King, our Country, our Religion and Liberty. God alloweth to go to War against an Enemy coming upon us, *Ex.* xvii. *Jud.* vi. upon this Ground was the Wars of *Joshua* against the *Amalekites*, 1 *Sam.* xv. of *Gideon* against the *Midianites*, and *Saul* against the *Philistines*; of *Ahab* against *Benhadad*, the *Romans* against *Hannibal*, and our Ancient

Britains

Britains againſt the *Romans*, *Saxons* and *Danes*: Kings may juſtly war againſt native Rebels, it is a juſt War to help Friends or Allies unjuſtly oppreſſed and wronged; upon this Ground *Abraham* armed himſelf againſt four Kings to recover *Lot*, whom they had carried away, *Gen.* xiv. *David* reſcued *Keilah* from the *Philiſtines*, 1 *Sam.* xxiii. *Saul*, *Jaboſh Gilead* from the *Ammonites*, *Judas* and *Simon* his Brother helped the other diſtreſſed *Jews*. It is a Reproach to Nations to forſake Friends, Confederates and ſuch as ſhould be helped in their Diſtreſs. God will allow us and command us in ſuch a Caſe; it is a juſt War to bring under ſuch Rebels. Now leſt Men embroil themſelves in needleſs uſe of the Sword to their own Deſtruction, in the next place it is to be conſidered by what Authority this War is to be undertaken, for a neceſſary and juſt War doth not warrant every one of their own Heads to make War; though they may be able to gather a Body of People together.

The firſt Mover thereof muſt be the Supreme Authority of the Nation. The Wars that God allowed, and which he always commands, were made ever under and by the Authority of thoſe whom he ſet over his People, *Ex.* xvii. 8. The War againſt *Amalek*, *Num.* xxxi. was commanded by *Moſes*, ſo was that againſt *Midian* in like manner; *Iſrael* war'd under the Command of *Joſhua*, and after under the *Judges*, and then under Kings, as *Saul*, *David* and the reſt. Neither ought Chriſtian Subjects

to

to be of a rebellious Principle, to wage War or take up Arms againſt their lawful Sovereign under Pretence of Religion, as has been done, and known, but never be it known again, to take up Arms againſt our Sovereign King. So I conclude as a loyal Subject, begging of God to preſerve his excellent Majeſty King *George*, and his Iſſue for ever.

F I N I S.

ERRATA.

Page 137. line 11. *read* Sas van Ghent et paſſim alibi.
181. 26. *read* 48 Hours.
243. 28. *read Notley's* Iſland.
244. 2. *read Notley* Iſland.

518561

BISHOP,Matthew.The Life and Adventures of Matthew Bishop of Deddington...containing an Account of several Actions by Sea,Battles and Sieges by land,in which he was present from 1701-11.8vo,original calf,London,1744.

$45.00

"Bishop took part in Sir Hovenden Walker's expedition against QUEBEC in 1711.He attributes the failure of the expedition to the extremely bad weather met with in the Gulf of St.Lawrence."
"An amusing piece of autobiography by a common sailor,containing an account of his expedition to CANADA,NEW ENGLAND,and other parts of AMERICA.-Sabin:5613."

I.Ehrlich
Box 994 Station B
Montréal